TRAVELS

INTO SEVERAL

Remote NATIONS

OF THE

WORLD.

In FOUR PARTS.

PART I. A Voyage to *Lilliput*, wherein are described the Customs and Manners of those diminutive People the *Lilliputians*, five of whom the Captain put at one Time, in his Coat-Pocket.

PART II. A Voyage to *Brobdingnag*, describing the Customs and Manners of those Gigantick People, the jointed Babies of whose Children were as big as the Giants at *Guild-Hall*.

PART III. A Voyage to *Laputa*, or a strange Country of *Mathematicians*, to *Balnibarbi*, *Glubbdrubdribb*, *Luggnagg* and *Japan*.

PART IV. A Voyage to the *Houyhnhnms*, or a Nation of *Horses*.

By Captain LEMUEL GULLIVER, *First a Surgeon, and then a Captain of several* SHIPS.

LONDON:

Printed and Sold by the Bookfellers of *London* and *Westminster*.

TRAVELS.

PART I.

A Voyage to *LILLIPUT.*

CHAP. I.

The Author gives some Account of himself and Family, his first Inducements to travel. He is shipwreck'd, and swims for his Life, gets safe on shoar in the Country of Lilliput, *is made a Prisoner, and carried up the Country.*

MY Father had a small Estate in *Nottinghamshire*; I was the third of five Sons. He sent me to *Emanuel College* in *Cambridge*, at fourteen Years old, where I resided three Years, and applyed myself close to my Studies; but the Charge of maintaining me (although I had a very scanty Allowance) being too great for a narrow Fortune, I was bound Apprentice to Mr. *James Bates*, an eminent Surgeon in *London*, with whom I con-

tinued four Years; and my Father now and then ſending me ſmall Sums of Money, I laid them out in learning Navigation, and other Parts of the Mathematicks, uſeful to thoſe who intend to travel, as I always believed it would ſometime or other be my Fortune to do. When I left Mr. *Bates*, I went down to my Father; where, by the Aſſiſtance of him and my Uncle *John*, and ſome other Relations, I got forty Pounds, and a Promiſe of thirty Pounds a Year to maintain me at *Leyden*: There I ſtudied Phyſick two Years and ſeven Months, knowing it would be uſeful in long Voyages.

Soon after my Return from *Leyden*, I was recommended by my good Maſter Mr. *Bates*, to be Surgeon to the Swallow, Captain *Abraham Pannell* Commander; with whom I continued three Years and a half, making a Voyage or two into the *Levant*, and ſome other Parts. When I came back, I reſolv'd to ſettle in *London*, to which Mr. *Bates*, my Maſter, encouraged me, and by him I was recommended to ſeveral Patients. I took part of a ſmall Houſe in the *Old-Jury*; and being adviſed to alter my Condition, I married Mrs. *Mary Burton*, ſecond Daughter to Mr. *Edmund Burton*, Hoſier, in *Newgate-ſtreet*, with whom I receiv'd four hundred Pounds for a Portion.

But, my good Maſter *Bates* dying in two Years after, and I having few Friends, my Buſineſs began to fail; for my Conſcience would not ſuffer me to imitate the bad Practice of too many among my Brethren. Having therefore conſulted with my Wife, and ſome of my Acquaintance, I was determined to go again to Sea. I was Surgeon ſucceſſively in two Ships, and made ſeveral Voyages for ſix Years, to the *Eaſt* and *Weſt-Indies*; by which I got ſome Addition to my Fortune. My Hours of Leiſure I ſpent in reading the beſt Authors, antient and modern, being always provided with a good Number of Books; and when I was on Shore, in obſerving the Manners and Diſpoſitions of the People, as well as learning their Language, wherein I had a great Facility by the Strength of my Memory.

The laſt of theſe Voyages not proving very fortunate, I grew weary of the Sea, and intended to ſtay at Home with my Wife and Family. I remov'd from the *Old-Jury* to *Fetter-Lane*, and from thence to *Wapping*, hoping to get Buſineſs among

mong the Sailors; but it would not turn to Account. After 3 Years Expectation that things would mend, I accepted an advantageous Offer from Captain *William Prichard*, Master of the Antelope, who was making a Voyage to the *South-Sea*. We set sail from *Bristol*, *May* 4, 1699, and our Voyage at first was very prosperous.

It would not be proper, for some Reasons to trouble the Reader with the Particulars of our Adventures in those Seas; let it suffice to inform him, that in our Passage from thence to the *East-Indies*, we were driven by a violent Storm to the North-west of *Van Diemen*'s Land. By an Observation, we found ourself in the Latitude of 30 Degrees 2 Minutes South. Twelve of our Crew were dead by immoderate Labour, and ill Food, the rest were in a very weak Condition. On the fifth of *November*, which was the Beginning of Summer in those Parts, the Weather being very hazy, the Seamen spied a Rock, within half a Cable's Length of the Ship; but the Wind was so strong, that we were driven directly upon it, and immediately split. Six of the Crew, of whom I was one, having let the Boat into the Sea, made a Shift to get clear of the Ship, and the Rock. We rowed by my Computation, about three Leagues, 'till we were able to Work no longer, being already spent with Labour, while we were in the Ship. We therefore trusted ourselves to the Mercy of the Waves, and in about half an Hour the Boat was overset by a sudden Flurry from the North. What became of my Companions in the Boat, as well of those who escap'd on the Rock, or were left in the Vessel, I cannot tell; but concludethey were all lost. For my own Part, I swam as Fortune directed me, and was pushed forward by Wind and Tide. I often let my Legs drop, and could feel no Bottom: But when I was almost gone, and able to struggle no longer, I found myself within my Depth; and by this time the Storm was much abated. The Declivity was so small, that I walked near a Mile before I got to the Shore, which I conjectured was about eight a-Clock in the Evening. I then advanced forward near half a Mile, but could not discover any Sign of Houses or Inhabitants; at least, I was in so weak a Condition that I did not observe them. I was extreamly tir'd, and that, and the Heat of the Weather, and about half a Pint of Brandy that I drunk as I left the Ship, I found myself much inclin'd to Sleep. I lay down on the Grass, which was very short and soft,

ſoft, where I ſlept ſounder than ever I did in my Life, and, as I reckoned about nine Hours; for when I awaked, it was juſt Day-light. I attempted to riſe, but was not able to ſtir: For as I happen'd to lie upon my Back, I found my Arms and Legs were ſtrongly faſten'd on each Side to the Ground; and my Hair which was long and thick, tied down in the ſame Manner. I likewiſe felt ſeveral Ligatures acroſs my Body, from my Arm-Pits to my Thighs. I could only look upwards, the Sun began to grow hot, and the Light offended my Eyes. I heard a confus'd Noiſe about me, but in the Poſture I lay, I could ſee nothing except the Sky. In a little time I felt ſomething moving on my Left Leg, which advancing gently forward over my Breaſt, came almoſt up to my Chin; when bending my Eyes downwards as much as I could, I perceiv'd it to be a human Creature not ſix Inches high, with a Bow and Arrow in his Hands, and a Quiver at his Back. In the mean time, I felt at leaſt Forty more of the ſame Kind (as I conjectured) following the firſt. I was in the utmoſt Aſtoniſhment, and roared ſo loud, that they all ran back in a Fright; and ſome of them, as I was afterwards told, were hurt by the Falls they got by leaping from my Sides upon the Ground. However, they ſoon returned, and one of them, who ventured ſo far as to get a full Sight of my Face, lifting up his Hands and Eyes by Way of Admiration, cryed out in a ſhrill, but diſtinct Voice, *Hekinah Degul*: The others repeated the ſame Words ſeveral times, but I then knew not what they meant. I lay all this while, as the Reader may believe in great Uneaſineſs: At length ſtruggling to get looſe, I had the Fortune to break the Strings, and wrench out the Pegs that faſten'd my left Arm to the Ground; for, by lifting it up to my Face, I diſcover'd the Methods they had taken to bind me, and at the ſame time, with a violent Pull, which gave me exceſſive Pain, I a little looſened the Strings that tied down my Hair, on the left Side, ſo that I was juſt able to turn my Head about two Inches. But the Creatures ran off a ſecond time, before I could ſeize them; whereupon there was a great Shout in a very ſhrill Accent, and after it ceaſed, I heard one of them cry aloud, *Tolgo Phonac*; when in an Inſtant I felt above a hundred Arrows diſcharg'd on my Left Hand, which pricked me like ſo many Needles; and beſides they ſhot another Flight into the Air, as we do Bombs in *Europe*, whereof many, I ſuppoſe, fell on my Body, (tho

(tho' I felt them not) and some on my Face, which I immediately cover'd with my Left Hand. When this Shower of Arrows was over, I fell a groaning with Grief and Pain, and then striving again to get loose, they discharged another Volly larger than the first, and some of them attemtped, with Spears, to stick me in the Sides; but, by good Luck, I had on me a Buff Jerking, which they could not pierce. I thought it the most prudent Method to lie still, and my Design was to continue so 'till Night, when my left Hand being already loose, I could easily free myself: And as for the Inhabitants, I had reason to believe I might be a Match for the greatest Armies they could bring against me, if they were all of the same Size with him that I saw. But Fortune disposed otherwise of me. When the People observing I was quiet, they discharged no more Arrows: But by the Noise I heard, I knew their Numbers encreased; and about four Yards from me, over-against my Right Ear, I heard a knocking for a above an Hour, like that of People at Work; when turning my Head as well as the Pegs and Strings would permit me, I saw a Stage erected, about a Foot and a half from the Ground, capable of holding four of the Inhabitants, with two or three Ladders to mount it: From whence one of them, who seem'd to be a Person of Quality, made me a long Speech, whereof I understood not one Syllable. But I should have mentioned, that before the principal Person began his Oration, he cryed out three Times, *Langro Dehul san*; (these Words and the former were afterwards repeated and explained to me.) Whereupon immediately about fifty of the Inhabitans came and cut the Strings that fastened the left Side of my Head, which gave me the Liberty of turning it to the right, and of observing the Person and Gesture of him that was to speak. He appear'd to be of a middle Age, and taller than any of the other three that attended him, whereof one was a Page that held up his Train, and seemed to be somewhat longer than my middle Finger; the other two stood on each Side to support him. He acted every Part of an Orator, and I could observe many Periods of Threatnings, and others of Promises, Pity and Kindness. I answer'd in a few Words, but in the most submissive Manner lifting up my left Hand and both my Eyes to the Sun, as calling him for a Witness; and being almost famished with Hunger, having not eaten a Morsel some Hours before I left the Ship, I found the Demands of Nature so

strong

ſtrong upon me, that I could not forbear ſhewing my Impatience (perhaps againſt the ſtrict Rules of Decency) by putting my Finger frequently on my Mouth, to ſignify that I wanted Food. The *Hurgo* (for ſo they call a great Lord, as I afterwards learnt) underſtood me very well. He deſcended from the Stage, and commanded that ſeveral Ladders ſhould be applyed to my Sides, on which above a hundred of the Inhabitants mounted, and walked towards my Mouth, laden with Baſkets full of Meat, which had been provided and ſent thither by the King's Orders, upon the firſt Intelligence he receiv'd of me. I obſerved there was the Fleſh of ſeveral Animals, but could not diſtinguiſh them by the Taſte. There were Shoulders, Legs and Loins, ſhapen'd like thoſe of Mutton, and very well dreſſed, but ſmaller than the Wings of a Lark. I eat them by two or three at a Mouthfull, and took three Loaves at a time, about the Bigneſs of Muſket Bullets. They ſupplied me as they could, ſhewing a thouſand Marks of Wonder and Aſtoniſhment at my Bulk and Appetite. I then made another Sign that I wanted Drink. They found by my eating, that a ſmall Quantity would not ſuffice me, and being a moſt ingenious People, they hung up with great Dexterity one of their largeſt Hogſheads, then rolled it towards my Hand, and beat out the Top; I drank it off at a Draught, which I might well do, for it did not hold half a Pint, and taſted like a ſmall Wine of Burgundy, but much more delicious. They brought a ſecond Hogſhead which I drank in the ſame Manner, and made Signs for more; but they had none to give me. When I had performed theſe Wonders, they ſhouted for Joy, and danced upon my Breaſt, repeating ſeveral times as they did at firſt, *Hekinah Degul*. They made me a Sign that I ſhould throw down the two Hogſheads, but firſt warning the People below to ſtand out of the Way, crying aloud, *Borach Mevola*, and when they ſaw the Veſſels in the Air, there was an univerſal Shout of *Hekinah Degul*. I confeſs I was often tempted, while they were paſſing backwards and forwards on my Body, to ſeize forty or fifty of the firſt that came in my Reach, and daſh them againſt the Ground. But the remembrance of what I had felt, which probably might not be the worſt they could do, and the Promiſe of Honour I made them, for ſo I interpreted my ſubmiſſive Behaviour ſoon drove out theſe Imaginations. Beſides, I now conſider'd myſelf as bound by the Laws of Hoſpitality to a People who had treated me with ſo much Expence

pence and Magnificence. However, in my Thoughts, I could not ſufficiently wonder at the Intrepidity of theſe diminutive Mortals, who durſt venture to mount and walk upon my Body, while one of my Hands was at Liberty, without trembling at the Sight of ſo prodigious a Creature as I muſt appear to them. After ſometime, when they obſerved that I made no more Demands for Meat, there appear'd before me a Perſon of high Rank from his imperial Majeſty. His Excellency having mounted on the Small of my Right Leg, advanced forwards up to my Face, with about a Dozen of his Retinue, and producing his Credentials under the Signet Royal, which he applyed cloſe to my Eyes, ſpoke about ten Minutes, without any Signs of Anger, but with a kind of determinate Reſolution; often pointing forwards, which, as I afterwards found, was towards the Capital City, about half a Mile diſtant, whither it was agreed, by his Majeſty in Council, that I muſt be convey'd. I anſwer'd in few Words, but to no Purpoſe, and made a Sign with my Hand that was looſe, putting it to the other (but over his Excellency's Head for fear of hurting him or his Train) and then to my own Head and Body, to ſignify that I deſired my Liberty. It appeared that he underſtood me well enough, for he ſhook his Head by Way of Diſapprobation, and held his Hand in a Poſture to ſhew that I muſt be carried as a Priſoner. However, he made other Signs to let me underſtand that I ſhould have Meat and Drink enough, and very good Treatment. Whereupon I once more thought of attempting to break my Bonds, but again, when I felt the Smart of their Arrows, upon my Face and Hands, which were all in Bliſters, and many of the Darts ſtill ſticking in them, and obſerving likewiſe that the Number of my Enemies encreas'd, I gave Tokens to let them know that they might do with me what they pleaſed. Upon this the *Hurgo* and his Train withdrew with much Civility and chearful Countenances. Soon after I heard a general Shout, with frequent Repetitions of the Words, *Peplom Selan*, and I felt great Numbers of People on my left Side relaxing the Cords to ſuch a Degree, that I was able to turn upon my Right, and to eaſe myſelf with making Water; which I very plentifully did, to the great Aſtoniſhment of the People, who conjectur'd by my Motions what I was going to do, immediately open'd to the right and left on that Side to avoid the Torrent which fell with ſuch

Noiſe and Violence from me. But before this, they had daubed my Face and both my Hands with a ſort of Ointment very pleaſant to the Smell, which in a few Minutes remov'd all the Smart of their Arrows. Theſe Circumſtances, added to the Refreſhment I had receiv'd by their Victuals and Drink which were very nouriſhing, diſpoſing me to Sleep. I ſlept about eight Hours, as I was afterwards aſſured; and it was no Wonder for the Phyſicians, by the Emperor's Order, had mingled a ſleepy Potion in the Hogſheads of Wine.

It ſeems that upon the firſt Moment I was diſcover'd ſleeping on the Ground after my landing, the Emperor had timely Notice of it by an Expreſs; and determined in Council that I ſhould be tyed in the Manner I have related, (which was done in the Night while I ſlept) that plenty of Meat and Drink ſhould be ſent to me, and a Machine prepared to carry me to the capital City.

This Reſolution perhaps may appear very bold and dangerous, and I am confident would not be imitated by any Prince in *Europe* on the like Occaſion; however, in my Opinion, it was extreamly prudent, as well as generous: For ſuppoſing theſe People had endeavour'd to kill me with their Spears and Arrows while I was aſleep, I ſhould certainly have awak'd with the firſt Senſe of Smart, which might ſo far have rouzed my Rage and Strength, as to have enabled me to break the Strings wherewith I was tyed; after which, as they were not able to make Reſiſtance, ſo they could expect no Mercy.

Theſe People are moſt excellent Mathematicians, and arriv'd to a great Perfection in Mechanicks, by the Countenance and Encouragment of the Emperor, who is a renowned Patron of Learning. This Prince had ſeveral Machines fixed on Wheels, for the Carriage of Trees and other great Weights. He often builds his largeſt Men of War, whereof ſome were nine Foot long, in the Woods where the Timber grows, and has them carried on theſe Engines three or four hundred Yards to the Sea. Five hundred Carpenters and Engineers were immediately ſet at Work to prepare the greateſt Engine they had. It was a Frame of Wood raiſed three Inches from the Ground, about ſeven Foot long and four wide, moving upon twenty two Wheels. The Shout I heard was upon the Arrival of this Engine, which it

ſeems

ſeems ſet out in four Hours after my Landing. It was brought parallel to me as I lay. But the principal Difficulty was to raiſe and place me in this Vehicle. Eighty Poles, each of one Foot high, were erected for this purpoſe, and very ſtrong Cords, of the bigneſs of Packthread, were faſten'd by Hooks to many Bandages, which the Workmen had girt round my Neck, my Hands, my Body, and my Legs. Nine hundred of the ſtrongeſt Men were imployed to draw up theſe Cords by many Pulleys faſtened on the Poles, and thus, in leſs than three Hours, I was rais'd and ſlung into the Engine, and there tied faſt. All this I was told, for while the whole Operation was performing, I lay in a profound Sleep, by the Force of that ſoporiferous Medicine infuſed into my Liquor. Fifteen hundred of the Emperor's largeſt Horſes, each about four Inches and a half high, were employed to draw me towards the Metropolis, which, as I ſaid, was half a Mile diſtant.

About four Hours after we began our Journey, I awak'd by a very ridiculous Accident; for the Carriage being ſtopt a while to adjuſt ſomething that was out of order, two or three of the young Natives had the Curioſity to ſee how I look'd when I was aſleep; they climbed up into the Engine, and advancing very ſoftly to my Face, one of them, an Officer in the Guards, put the ſharp End of his half Pike a good way up into my left Noſtril, which tickled my Noſe like a Straw, and made me ſneeze violently: Whereupon they ſtole off unperceiv'd, and it was three Weeks before I knew the Cauſe of my awaking ſo ſuddenly. We made a long March the remaining part of the Day, and reſted at Night with five hundred Guards on each ſide of me, half with Torches, half with Bows and Arrows, ready to ſhoot me if I ſhould offer to ſtir. The next Morning at Sun-riſe, we continued our March, and arriv'd within two hundred Yards of the City-Gates about Noon. The Emperor, and all his Court came out to meet us, but his great Officers would by no Means ſuffer his Majeſty to endanger his Perſon by mounting on my Body.

At the Place where the Carriage ſtopt, there ſtood an antient Temple, eſteem'd to be the largeſt in the whole Kingdom, which having been polluted ſome Years before by an unnatural Murder, was, according to the Zeal of thoſe People, look'd on as prophane, and therefore had

been applyed to common Uſe, and all the Ornaments and Furniture carried away. In this Edifice it was determined I ſhould lodge. The great Gate fronting to the North was about four Foot high, and almoſt two Foot wide, through which I could eaſily creep. On each Side of the Gate, was a ſmall Window not above ſix Inches from the Ground: Into that on the left Side, the King's Smith convey'd fourſcore and eleven Chains, like thoſe that hang to a Lady's Watch in *Europe*, and almoſt as large, which were lock'd to my Left Leg with ſix and thirty Padlocks. Over-againſt this Temple, on the other Side of the Highway, at twenty Foot diſtance, there was a Turret at leaſt five Foot high. Here the Emperor aſcended with many principal Lords of his Court, to have an Opportunity of viewing me, as I was told, for I could not ſee them. It was reckon'd that above an hundred thouſand Inhabitants came out of the Town upon the ſame Errand; and in ſpite of my Guards, I believe there could not be fewer than ten thouſand, at ſeveral times, who mounted my Body by the help of Ladders. But a Proclamation was ſoon Iſſued to forbid it upon Pain of Death. When the Workmen found it was impoſſible for me to break looſe, they cut all the Strings that bound me; whereupon I roſe up with as melancholy a Diſpoſition as ever I had in my Life. But the Noiſe and Aſtoniſhment of the People at ſeeing me riſe and Walk, are not to be expreſſed. The Chains that held my Left Leg were about two Yards long, and gave me not only the Liberty of walking backwards and forwards in a Semicircle; but being fixed within four Inches of the Gate, allowed me to creep in, and lie at my full Length in the Temple.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The Emperor of Lilliput, *attended by several of the Nobility, come to see the Author in his Confinement. The Emperor's Person and Habit described. Learned Men appointed to teach the Author their Language. He gains Favour by his mild Disposition. His Pockets are searched, and his Sword and Pistols taken from him.*

WHEN I found myself on my Feet, I looked about me, and must confess I never beheld a more entertaining Prospect. The Country round, appeared like a continued Garden, and in the inclosed Fields, which were generally forty Foot square, resembled so many Beds of Flowers. These Fields were intermingled with Woods of half a Stang, and the tallest Trees, as I could judge, appeared to be seven Foot high. I viewed the Town on my left Hand which looked like the painted Scene of a City in a Theater.

I had been for some Hours extreamly pressed by the Necessities of Nature; which was no Wonder, it being almost two Days since I had last disburthened myself. I was under great Difficulties between Urgency and Shame. The best Expediment I could think on, was to creep into my House, which accordingly I did; and shutting the Gate after me, I went as far as the Length of my Chain would suffer, and discharg'd my Body of that uneasy Load. But this was the only time I was ever guilty of so uncleanly an Action; for which I cannot but hope the candid Reader will give some Allowance, after he hath maturely and impartially considered my Case, and the Distress I was in. From this time my constant Practice was, as soon as I rose to perform that Business in open Air, at the full extent of my Chain, and due Care was taken every Morning before Company came, that the offensive Matter should be caried away in Wheel-Barrows by two Servants appointed for that Purpose. I would not have dwelt so long upon a Circumstance, that perhaps, at first Sight, may appear not very momentous, if I had not thought it necessary to justify my Character in Point of Cleanliness to the World; which I am told some of my Maligners have been pleased up-

on this and other Occaſions, to call in Queſtion.

When this Adventure was at an End, I came back out of my Houſe, having Occaſion for freſh Air. The Emperor was already deſcended from the Tower, and advancing on Horſeback towards me, which had like to have coſt him dear; for the Beaſt, though very well trained, yet wholly unuſed to ſuch a Sight, which appeared as if a Mountain mov'd before him, reared up on his hinder Feet: But that Prince being an excellent Horſeman, kept his Seat, 'till his Attendants ran in, and held the Bridle, while his Majeſty had time to diſmount. When he alighted, he ſurveyed me with great Admiration, but kept without the length of my Chain. He order'd his Cooks and Butlers, who were already prepar'd to give me Victuals and Drink, which they puſhed forward in a ſort of Vehicles upon Wheels 'till I could reach them. I took theſe Vehicles, and ſoon emptied them all; twenty of them were filled with Meat, and ten with Liquor, each of the former afforded me two or three good Mouthfuls, and I emptied the Liquor of ten Veſſels, which was contained in earthen Vials, into one Vehicle, drinking it off at a Draught, and ſo I did the reſt. The Emperſs, and young Princes of the Blood, of both Sexes, attended by many Ladies, ſat at ſome Diſtance in their Chairs, but upon the Accident that happened to the Emperor's Horſe, they alighted, came near his Perſon, which I am now going to deſcribe. He is taller by almoſt the Breadth of my Nail, then any of his Court, which alone is enough to ſtrike an Awe into the Beholders. His Features are ſtrong and maſculine, with an *Auſtrian* Lip and arched Noſe, his Complexion olive, his Countenance erect, his Body and Limbs well proportioned, all his Motions graceful, and his Deportment majeſtick. He was then paſt his Prime, being twenty eight Years and three quarters old, of which he had reigned about ſeven, in great Felicity, and generally Victorious. For the better Convenience of beholding him, I lay on my Side, ſo that my Face was parrallel to his, and he ſtood but three Yards off: However, I had him ſince many times in my Hand, and therefore cannot be deceived in the Deſcription. His Dreſs was very plain and ſimple, and the Faſhion of it, between the *Aſiatick* and the *European*: But he had on his Head a light helmet of Gold, adorn'd with Jewels, and a Plume on the Creſt. He held his Sword drawn in his

his Hand, to defend himself, if I should happen to break loose; it was almost three Inches long, the Hilt and Scabbard were Gold enrich'd with Diamonds. His Voice was shrill, but very clear and articulate, and I could distinctly hear it when I stood up. The Ladies and Courtiers were all most magnificently clad, so that the Spot they stood upon seemed to resemble a Petticoat spread on the Ground, embroidered with Figures of Gold and Silver. His Imperial Majesty spoke often to me, and I returned Answers, but neither of us could understand a Syllable. There were several of his Priests and Lawyers present, (as I conjectur'd by their Habits) who were commanded to address themselves to me, and I spoke to them in as many Languages as I had the least smattering of, which were *High* and *Low Dutch*, *Latin*, *French*, *Spanish*, *Italian*, *Lingua Franca*; but all to no purpose. After about two Hours the Court retired, and I was left with a strong Guard, to prevent the Impertinence, and probably the Malice of the Rabble, who were very impatient to croud about me as near as they durst, and some of them had the Impudence to shoot their Arrows at me as I sat on the Ground by the Door of my House, whereof one very narrowly miss'd my left Eye, but the Colonel ordered Six of the Ringleaders to be seized, and thought no Punishment so proper as to deliver them bound into my Hands, which some of his Soldiers accordingly did, pushing them forwards with the But-ends of their Pikes, into my Reach; I took them all in my Right Hand, put five of them into my Coat-Pocket, and as to the sixth, I made a Countenance as if I would eat him alive. The poor Man squalled terribly, and the Colonel and his Officers were in much Pain, when they saw me take out my Penknife: But I soon put them out of Fear; for, looking mildly and immediately cutting the Strings he was bound with, I set him gently on the Ground, and away he ran; I treated the rest in the same Manner, taking them, one by one, out of my Pocket, and I observed both the Soldiers and People were obliged at this Mark of Clemency, which was represented very much to my Advantage at Court.

Towards Night I got, with some Difficulty, into my House where I lay on the Ground, and continued so about a Fortnight; during which Time the Emperor gave Orders to have a Bed prepared for me. Six hundred Beds of the common Measure were brought in Carriages and worked up in my House, an hundred and fifty of their Beds sown together made

made up the Breadth and Length; and these were four double, which, however, kept me but very indifferently from the Hardness of the Floor, that was of smooth Stone. By the same Computation they provided me with Sheets, Blankets, and Coverlets, tolerable enough for one who had so long been inured to Hardships.

As the News of my Arrival spread through the Kingdom, it brought prodigious Numbers of rich, idle, and curious People to see me; so that the Villages were almost emptied, and great Neglect of Tillage and Houshold Affairs must have ensued, if his Imperial Majesty had not provided, by several Proclamations and Orders of State, against this Inconveniency. He directed, that those who had already beheld me should return Home, and not presume to come within fifty Yards of my House, without Licence from Court; whereby the Secretaries of State got considerable Fees.

In the mean time, the Emperor held frequent Councils to debate what Course should be taken with me; and I was afterwards assured by a particular Friend, a Person of great Quality who was looked upon to be as much in the Secret as any, that the Court was under many Difficulties concerning me. They apprehended my breaking loose, that my Diet would be very expensive, and might cause a Famine. Sometimes they determined to starve me, or at least to shoot me in the Face and Hands with poisoned Arrows, which would soon dispatch me; but again they consider'd, that the Stench of so large a Carcase might produce a Plague in the Metropolis, and probably spread through the whole Kingdom. In the midst of these Consultations, several Officers of the Army went to the Door of the great Council-Chamber; and two of them being admitted, gave an Account of my Behaviour to the Six Criminals above-mentioned, which made so favourable an Impression in the Breast of his Majesty and the whole Board in my Behalf, that an Imperial Commission was issued out, obliging all the Villages nine hundred Yards round the City, to deliver in every Morning six Beeves, forty Sheep, and other Victuals for my Sustenance; together with a proportionable Quantity of Bread, and Wine and other Liquors: for the due Payment of which his Majesty gave assignments upon his Treasury. For this Prince lives chiefly upon his own Demesnes, seldom, except upon great Occasions, raising any Subsidies

Subſidies upon his Subjects, who are bound to attend him in his Wars at their own Expence. An Eſtabliſhment was alſo made of ſix hundred Perſons to be my Domeſticks, who had Board-Wages allowed for their Maintenance, and Tents built for them very conveniently on each Side of my Door. It was likewiſe ordered, that three hundred Taylors ſhould make me a Suit of Cloaths after the Faſhion of the Country: That ſix of his Majeſty's greateſt Scholars ſhould be employed to inſtruct me in their Language: And, laſtly, that the Emperor's Horſes, and thoſe of the Nobility, and Troops of Guards, ſhould be frequently exerciſed in my Sight, to accuſtom themſelves tome. All theſe Orders were duly put in Execution, and in about three Weeks I made a great Progreſs in learning their Language; during which Time, the Emperor frequently honour'd me with his Viſits, and was pleaſed to aſſiſt my Maſters in teaching me. We began already to converſe together in ſome Sort; and the firſt Words I learnt were to expreſs my Deſire that he would give me my Liberty; which I every Day repeated on my Knees. His Anſwer, as I could apprehend it, was, that this muſt be a Work of Time, not to be thought on without the Advice of Council, and that firſt I muſt *Lumos Kelmin peſſo deſmar lon Empoſo*; that is, ſwear a Peace with him and his Kingdom. However, that I ſhould be uſed with all Kindneſs; and he adviſed me to acquire, by my Patience and diſcreet Behaviour, the good Opinion of himſelf and his Subjects. He deſired I would not take it ill if he gave Orders to certain Officers to ſearch me; for probably I might carry about me ſeveral Weapons, which muſt needs be dangerous Things, if they anſwered the Bulk of ſo prodigious a Perſon. I ſaid, his Majeſty ſhould be ſatisfyed, for I was ready to ſtrip myſelf, and turn up my Pockets before him. This I delivered Part in Words, and part in Signs. He replyed that by the Laws of the Kingdom I muſt be ſearched by two of his Officers; that he knew this could not be done without my Conſent and Aſſiſtance; that he had ſo good Opinion of my Generoſity and Juſtice, as to truſt their Perſons in my Hands: That whatever they took from me ſhould be returned when I left the Country, or paid for at the Rate which I would ſet upon them. I took up the two Officers in my Hands, put them firſt into my Coat-Pockets, and then into every other Pocket about me, except my two Fobs, and another ſecret Pocket I had no Mind ſhould be ſearched,

wherein I had ſome little Neceſſaries that were of no Conſequence to any but my ſelf. In one of my Fobs there was a ſilver Watch, and in the other a ſmall Quantity of Gold in a Purſe. Theſe Gentlemen, having Pen, Ink and Paper about them, made an exact Inventory of every Thing they ſaw; and when they had done, deſired I would ſet them down, that they might deliver it to the Emperor. This Inventory I afterwards tranſlated into *Engliſh*, and is Word for Word as follows.

Imprimis, In the right Coat-Pocket of the *Great Man-Mountain* (for ſo I interpret the Words *Quinbus Fleſtrine*, after the ſtricteſt Search, we found only one great Piece of Coarſe Cloth) large enough to be a Foot-Cloth for your Majeſty's chief Room of State. In the left Pocket, we ſaw a hugh ſilver Cheſt, with a Cover of the ſame Metal, which we the Searchers were not able to lift. We deſired it ſhould be opened, and one of us ſtepping into it, found himſelf up to the mid Leg, in a ſort of Duſt, ſome part whereof flying up to our Faces, ſet us both a ſneezing for ſeveral times together. In his right Waiſtcoat Pocket, we found a prodigious Bundle of white thin Subſtances, folded one over another, about the Bigneſs of three Men, tied with a ſtrong Cable, and marked with black Figures; which we humbly conceive to be Writings, every Letter almoſt as large as the Palm of our Hands. In the left there was a ſort of Engine, from the Back of which were extended twenty long Poles, reſembling the Paliſado's before your Majeſty's Court; wherewith we conjectur'd the *Man-Mountain* combs his Head, for we did not always trouble him with Queſtions, becauſe we found it a great Difficulty to make him underſtand us. In the large Pocket on the right Side of his middle Cover, (ſo I tranſlate the Word *Ranfu-Lo*, by which they meant my Breeches) we ſaw a hollow Pillar of Iron, about the Length of a Man, faſtened to a ſtrong Piece of Timber, larger than the Pillar; and upon one Side of the Pillar were huge Pieces of Iron ſticking out, cut into ſtrange Figures, which we know not what to make of. In the left Pocket, another Engine of the ſame Kind. In the ſmaller Pocket on the right Side, were ſeveral round flat Pieces of white and red Metal, of different Bulk; ſome of the White, which ſeemed to to be Silver, were ſo large and heavy, that my Comrade and I could hardly lift them. In the left Pocket were two black Pillars irregularly ſhaped:

We

We could not, without Difficulty, reach the Top of them as we ſtood at the Bottom of his Pocket. One of them was covered, and ſeemed all of a Piece: But at the upper End of the other, there appeared a white round Subſtance, about twice the Bigneſs, of our Heads. Within each of theſe was enclos'd a Prodigious Plate of Steel; which, by our Orders, we obliged him to ſhew us, becauſe we apprehended they might be dangerous Engines. He took them out of their Caſes, and told us, that in his own Country his Practice was to ſhave his Beard with one of theſe, and to cut his Meat with the other. There were two Pockets which we could not enter: Theſe he called his Fobs; they were two large Slits cut into the Top of his middle Cover, but ſqueez'd cloſe by the Preſſure of his Belly. Out of the right Fob hung a ſilver Chain, with a wonderful kind of Engine at the Bottom. We directed him to draw out whatever was faſtened to that Chain; which appeared to be a Globe, half ſilver, and half of ſome tranſparent Metal: For on the tranſparent Side we ſaw certain ſtrange Figures circularly drawn, and thought we could touch them, 'till we found our Fingers ſtopped by that lucid Subſtance. He put this Engine to our Ears, which made an inceſſant Noiſe like that of a Water-Mill. And we conjecture it is either ſome unknown Animal, or the God that he Worſhips: But we are more inclined to the latter Opinion, becauſe he aſſured us, (if we underſtood him right, for he expreſſed himſelf imperfectly) that he ſeldom did any Thing without conſulting it. He call'd it his Oracle, and ſaid, it pointed out the Time for every Action of his Life. From the left Fob he took out a Net almoſt large enough for a Fiſherman, but contriv'd to open and ſhut like a Purſe, which ſerv'd him for the ſame Uſe: We found therein ſeveral maſſy Pieces of yellow Metal, which if they be real Gold, muſt be of immenſe Value.

Having thus, in obedience to your Majey's Commands, diligently ſearched all his Pockets, we obſerved a Girdle about his Waiſt made of the Hide of ſome prodigious Animal, from which on the left Side, hung a Sword of the Length of five Men; and on the right, a Bag or Pouch divided into two Cells, each Cell capable of holding three of your Majeſty's Subjects. In one of theſe Cells were ſeveral Globes or Balls of a moſt ponderous Metal, about the Bigneſs of our Heads, and requir'd a ſtrong Hand to lift them: The other Cell contained a

Heap

Heap of certain black Grains, but of no great Bulk or Weight, for we could hold above fifty of them in the Palms of our Hands.

This is an exact Inventory of what we found about the Body of the *Man-Mountain*, who uſed us with great Civility, and due Reſpect to your Majeſty's Commiſſion. Signed and ſealed on the fourth Day of the eighty ninth Moon of your Majeſty's auſpicious Reign.

Clefrin Frelock, Marſi Frelock.

When this Inventory was read over to the Emperor, he directed me, although in very gentle Terms, to deliver up the ſeveral Particulars. He firſt called for my Scymiter, which I took out, Scabbard and all. In the mean Time he ordered three thouſand of his choiceſt Troops (who then attended him) to ſurround me at a Diſtance, with their Bows and Arrows juſt ready to diſcharge: But I did not obſerve it, for mine Eyes were wholly fixed upon his Majeſty. He then deſired me to draw my Scymiter, which, although it had got ſome Ruſt by the Sea-Water, was in moſt Parts exceeding bright. I did ſo, and immediately all the Troops gave a Shout between Terror and Surprize; for the Sun ſhone clear, and the Reflection dazzled their Eyes as I waved the Scymiter to and fro in my Hand. His Majeſty, who is a moſt magnanimous Prince, was leſs daunted than I could expect; he ordered me to return it into the Scabbard, and caſt it on the Ground as gently as I could, about ſix Foot from the End of my Chain. The next thing he demanded, was one of the hollow Iron Pillars, by which he meant my Pocket-Piſtols. I drew it out, and at his Deſire, as well as I could, expreſſed to him the Uſe of it; and charging it only with Powder, which by the Cloſeneſs of my Pouch happened to eſcape wetting in the Sea, (an Inconvenience againſt which all prudent Mariners take ſpecial Care to provide) I firſt cautioned the Emperor not to be afraid, and then I let it off in the Air. The Aſtoniſhment here was much greater than at the Sight of my Scymiter. Hundreds fell down as if they had been ſtruck dead; and even the Emperor, although he ſtood his Ground, could not recover himſelf in ſome Time. I delivered up both my Piſtols in the ſame Manner, as I had done my Scymiter, and then my Pouch of Powder and Bullets; begging him that the former might be kept from the Fire, for

for it would kindle with the ſmalleſt Spark, and blow up his Imperial Palace into the Air. I likewiſe deliver'd up my Watch, which the Emperor was very curious to ſee, and commanded two of his talleſt Yeomen of the Guards to bear it on a Pole upon their Shoulders, as Dray-Men in *England* do a Barrel of Ale. He was amazed at the continual Noiſe it made, and the Motion of the Minute-Hand, which he could eaſily diſcern; for their Sight is much more acute than ours; and aſked the Opinions of his learned Men about him, which were various and remote, as the Reader may well imagine without my repeating; although indeed I could not very perfectly underſtand them. I then gave up my Silver and Copper Money, my Purſe with nine large Pieces of Gold, and ſome ſmaller ones; my Knife and and Razor, my Comb and ſilver Snuff-Box, my Handkerchief and Journal-Book. My Scymiter, Piſtols, and Pouch, were conveyed in Carriages to his Majeſty's Stores; but the reſt of my Goods were returned me.

I had, as I have before obſerv'd, one private Pocket which eſcap'd their Search, wherein there was a pair of Spectacles, (which I ſometimes uſe for the Weakneſs of mine Eyes) a Pocket-perſpective, and ſeveral other little Conveniences; which being of no Conſequence to the Emperor, I did not think myſelf bound in Honour to diſcover, and I apprehended they might be loſt or ſpoiled if I venturged them out of my Poſſeſſion.

CHAP. III.

The Author diverts the Emperor and his Nobility of both Sexes in a very uncommon Manner. The Diverſions of the Court of Lilliput *deſcribed. The Author has his Liberty granted him upon certain Conditions.*

MY Gentleneſs and good Behaviour had gained ſo far on the Emperor and his Court, and indeed upon the Army and People in general, that I began to conceive Hopes of getting my Liberty in a ſhort time. I took all poſſible

Methods to cultivate this favourable Diſpoſition. The Natives came by degrees to be leſs apprehenſive of any Danger from me. I would ſometimes lie down, and let five or ſix of them dance on my Hand. And at laſt the Boys and Girls would venture to come and play at Hide and Seek in my Hair. I had now made a good Progreſs in underſtanding and ſpeaking their Language. The Emperor had a Mind one Day to entertain me with ſeveral of the Country Shows, wherein they exceed all Nations I have known, both for Dexterity and Magnificence. I was diverted with none ſo much as that of the Rope-Dancers, performed upon a ſlender white Thread, extended about two Foot, and twelve Inches from the Ground. Upon which I ſhall deſire Liberty, with the Reader's Patience, to enlarge a little.

This Diverſion is only practiſed by thoſe Perſons who are Candidates for great Employments, and high Favour, at Court. They are trained in this Art from their Youth, and are not always of noble Birth, or liberal Education. When a great Office is vacant, either by Death or Diſgrace (which often happens) five or ſix of thoſe Candidates petition the Emperor to entertain his Majeſty and the Court with a Dance on the Rope, and whoever jumps the higheſt, without falling, ſucceeds in the Office. Very often the chief Miniſters themſelves are commanded to ſhew their Skill, and to convince the Emperor that they have not loſt their Faculty. *Flimnap* the Treaſurer, is allowed to cut a Caper on the ſtrait Rope, at leaſt an Inch higher than any other Lord in the whole Empire. I have ſeen him do the Summerſet ſeveral times together upon a Trencher fixed on the Rope, which is no thicker than a common Packthread in *England*. My Friend *Reldreſel*, Principal Secretary for private Affairs, is in my Opinion, if I am not partial, the ſecond after the Treaſurer; the reſt of the great Officers are much upon a Par.

Theſe Diverſions are often attended with fatal Accidents, whereof great Numbers are on Record. I myſelf have ſeen two or three Candidates break a Limb. But the Danger is much greater when the Miniſters themſelves are commanded to ſhew their Dexterity; for by contending to excel themſelves and their Fellows they ſtrain ſo far, that there is hardly one of them who hath not received a Fall, and ſome of them two or three. I was aſſured that a Year or

two

two before my Arrival, *Flimnap* would have infallibly broke his Neck, if one of the King's Cushions, that accidentally lay on the Ground, had not weakened the Force of his Fall.

There is likewise another Diversion which is only shewn before the Emperor and Empress, and first Minister, upon particular Occasions. The Emperor lays on a Table three fine silken Threads, of six Inches long. One is Purple, the other Yellow, and the third is White. These Threads are proposed as Prizes for those Persons whom the Emperor hath a Mind to distinguish by a peculiar Mark of his Favour. The Ceremony is perform'd in his Majesty's great Chamber of State, where the Candidates are to undergo a Tryal of Dexterity very different from the former, and such as I have not observed the least Resemblance of in any other Country of the old or new World. The Emperor holds a Stick in his Hands, both Ends parallel to the Horizon, while the Candidates advancing, one by one, sometimes leap over the Stick, sometimes creep under it, backwards and forwards, several times, according as the Stick is advanced or depressed. Sometimes the Emperor holds one End of the Stick, and his first Minister the other; sometimes the Minister has it entirely to himself. Whoever performs his Part with most Agility, and holds out the longest in Leaping and Creeping, is rewarded with the Purple coloured Silk; the Yellow is given to the next, and the White to the third, which they all wear girt twice round about the Middle; and you see few great Persons about this Court, who are not adorned with one of these Girdles.

The Horses of the Army, and those of the royal Stables, having been daily led before me, were no longer shy, but would come up to my very Feet without starting. The Riders would leap them over my Hand as I held it on the Ground, and one of the Emperor's Huntsmen, upon a large Courser, took my Foot, Shoe and all; which was indeed a prodigious Leap. I had the good Fortune to divert the Emperor one Day after a very extraordinary Manner. I desired he would order several Sticks of two Foot high, and the Thickness of an ordinary Cane, to be brought me; whereupon his Majesty commanded the Master of his Woods to give Directions accordingly, and the next Morning six Woodmen arriv'd with as many Carriages, drawn by eight Horses to each. I took nine of

these

these Sticks, and fixing them firmly in the Ground in a quadrangular Figure, two Foot and a half square, I took four other Sticks, and tied them parallel at each Corner, about two Foot from the Ground; then I fasten'd my Handkerchief to the nine Sticks that stood erect, and extended it on all Sides 'till it was as tight as the Top of a Drum; and the four parallel Sticks, rising about five Inches, higher than the Handkerchief, served as Ledges on each Side. When I had finished my Work, I desired the Emperor to let a Troop of his best Horse, twenty four in Number, come and exercise upon this Plain. His Majesty approved of the Proposal, and I took them up one by one in my Hands, ready mounted and armed with the proper Officers, to exercise them. As soon as they got into Order, they divided into two Parties, performed mock Skirmishes, discharged blunt Arrows, drew their Swords, fled and pursued, attacked and retired, and in short discovered the best military Discipline I ever beheld. The parallel Sticks secured them and their Horses from falling over the Stage; and the Emperor was so much delighted, that he ordered this Entertainment to be repeated several Days, and once was pleased to be lifted up, and give the Word of Command; and, with great Difficulty, persuaded even the Empress herself to let me hold her in her close Chair, within two Yards of the Stage, from whence she was able to take a full View of the whole Performance. It was my good Fortune that no ill Accident happened in these Entertainments, only once a fiery Horse that belonged to one of the Captains pawing with his Hoof, struck a Hole in my Handkerchief, and his Foot slipping, he overthrew his Rider and himself; but I immediately relieved them both; and covering the Hole with one Hand, I set down the Troop with the other, in the same Manner, as I took them up. The Horse that fell was strained in the Left Shoulder, but the Rider got no Hurt, and I repaired my Handkerchief as well as I could; however, I would not trust to the Strength of it any more in such dangerous Enterprizes.

About two or three Days before I was set at Liberty, as I was entertaining the Court with these kind of Feats, there arrived an Express to inform his Majesty, that some of his Subjects, riding near the Place where I was first taken up, had seen a great black Substance lying on the Ground very odly shaped, extended its Edges round

as

as wide as his Majesty's Bed-Chamber, and rising up in the middle as high as a Man; that it was no living Creature, as they at first apprehended, for it lay on the Grass without Motion; and some of them had walked round it several Times: That by mounting upon each other's Shoulders, they had got to the Top, which was flat and even, and stamping upon it, they found it was hollow within; that they humbly conceived it might be something belonging to the *Man-Mountain*; and if his Majesty pleased, they would undertake to bring it with only five Horses. I presently knew what they meant, and was glad at Heart to receive this Intelligence. It seems upon my first reaching the Shore after our Shipwreck, I was in such Confusion, that before I came to the Place where I went to sleep, my Hat, which I had fastened with a String to my Head while I was rowing, and had stuck on all the time I was swimming, fell off after I came to Land; the String, as I conjecture, breaking by some Accident which I never observed, but thought my Hat had been lost at Sea. I intreated his imperial Majesty to give Orders, it might be brought to me as soon as possible, describing to him the Use and Nature of it: And the next Day the Waggoners arrived with it, but not in a very good Condition; they had bor'd two Holes in the Brim, within an Inch and a half of the Edge, and fastened two Hooks in the Holes; these Hooks were tied by a long Cord to the Harness, and thus my Hat was dragged along for above half an *English* Mile: But the Ground in that Country being extreamly smooth and level, it receiv'd less Damage than I expected.

Two Days after this Adventure, the Emperor having ordered that Part of his Army which quarters in and about his Metropolis to be in a Readiness, took a Fancy of diverting himself in a very singular Manner. He desir'd I would stand like a *Colossus*, with my Legs as far asunder as I conveniently could. He then commanded his General, (who was an old experienced Leader, and a great Patron of mine) to draw up the Troops in close Order, and march them under me; the Foot by twenty four in a Breast, and the Horse by sixteen, with Drums beating, Colours flying, and Pikes advanced. This Body consisted of three thousand Foot, and a thousand Horse. His Majesty gave Orders, upon pain of Death, that every Soldier in his March should observe the strictest Decency,

with Regard to my Perſon; which, however, could not prevent ſome of the younger Officers from turning up their Eyes, as they paſſed under me. And, to confeſs the Truth, my Breeches were at that time in ſo ill a Condition, that they afforded ſome Opportunities for Laughter and Admiration.

I had ſent ſo many Memorials and Petitions for my Liberty, that his Majeſty at length mentioned the Matter firſt in the Cabinet, and then in a full Council; where it was oppoſed by none, except *Skyreſh Bolgolam*, who was pleaſed, without any Provocation, to be my mortal Enemy. But it was carried againſt him by the whole Board, and confirmed by the Emperor. That Miniſter was *Galbet*, or Admiral of the Realm, very much in his Maſter's Confidence, and a Perſon well verſed in Affairs, but of a moroſe and ſour Complection. However, he was at length perſuaded to comply; but prevailed that the Articles and Conditions upon which I ſhould be ſet free, and to which I muſt ſwear, ſhould be drawn up by himſelf. Theſe Articles were brought to me by *Skyreſh Bolgolam* in Perſon, attended by two Under-Secretaries, and ſeveral Perſons of Diſtinction. After they were read, I was demanded to ſwear to the Performance of them; firſt in the Manner of my own Country, and afterwards in the Method preſcribed by their Laws: Which was to hold my right Foot in my Left Hand, to place the middle Finger of my Right Hand on the Crown of my Head, and my Thumb on the Tip of my right Ear. But becauſe the Reader, may perhaps be curious to have ſome Idea of the Style and Manner of Expreſſion peculiar to that People, as well as to know the Articles upon which I recovered my Liberty, I have made a Tranſlation of the whole Inſtrument Word for Word, as near as I was able, which I here offer to the Publick.

Golbaſto Momaren Evlame Gurdilo Shefin Mully Ully Gue, Moſt Mighty Emperor of *Lilliput*, Delight and Terror of the Univerſe, whoſe Dominions extend five thouſand *Bluſtrugs*, (about twelve Miles in Circumference) to the Extremities of the Globe; Monarch of all Monarchs, taller than the Sons of Men; whoſe Feet preſs to down the Center, and whoſe Head ſtrikes againſt the Sun: At whoſe Nod the Princes of the Earth ſhake their Knees; pleaſant as the Spring, comfortable as the Summer, fruitful as Autumn dreadful as Winter. His moſt Sublime Majeſty propoſed

poſed to the *Man-Mountain*, lately arrived to our Celeſtial Dominions, the following Articles, which by a ſolemn Oath he ſhall be obliged to perform.

Firſt, The *Man-Mountain* ſhall not depart from our Dominions, without our Licence under our Great Seal.

2*d*, He ſhall not preſume to come into our Metropolis, without our Expreſs Order; at which time the Inhabitants ſhall have two Hours Warning to keep within their Doors.

3*d*, The ſaid *Man-Mountain* ſhall confine his Walks to our principal high Roads, and not offer to walk or lie down in a Meadow or Field of Corn.

4*th*, As he walks the ſaid Roads, he ſhall take the utmoſt Care not to trample upon the Bodies of any of our loving Subjects, their Horſes, or Carriages, nor take any of our ſaid Subjects into his Hands, without their own Conſent.

5*th*, If an Expreſs requires extraordinary Diſpatch, the *Man-Mountain* ſhall be obliged to carry in his Pocket the Meſſenger and Horſe a ſix Days Journey once in every Moon, and return the ſaid Meſſenger back (if ſo required) ſafe to our Imperial Preſence.

6*th*, He ſhall be our Ally againſt our Enemies, in the Iſland of *Bleſuſcu*, and do his utmoſt to deſtroy their Fleet, which is now preparing to invade us.

7*th*, That the ſaid *Man-Mountain* ſhall, at his Times of Leiſure, be aiding and aſſiſting to our Workmen, in helping to raiſe certain great Stones, towards covering the Wall of the principal Park, and other our Royal Buildings.

8*th*, That the ſaid *Man-Mountain* ſhall, in two Moons Time, deliver in an exact ſurvey of the Circumference of our Dominions by a Computation of his own Paces round the Coaſt.

Laſtly, That upon his ſolemn Oath to obſerve all the above Articles, the ſaid *Man-Mountain* ſhall have a daily Allowance of Meat and Drink ſufficient for the Support of 1728 of our Subjects, with free Acceſs to our Royal Perſon, and other Marks of our Favour. Given at our Palace at *Belfaborac* the twelfth Day of the ninety firſt Moon of our Reign.

I ſwore and ſubſcribed to theſe Articles with great Chearfulneſs and Content, although ſome of them were not ſo honourable as I could have wiſhed; which proceeded wholly from the Malice of *Skyreſh Bolgolam* the High-Admiral: Whereupon my Chains were immediately unlocked, and I was at full Liberty; the Emperor himſelf did me the Honour to be by at the whole Ceremony. I made my Acknowledgments by proſtrating myſelf at his Majeſty's Feet: But he commanded me to riſe; and after many gracious Expreſſions, which, to avoid the Cenſure of Vanity, I ſhall not repeat, he added, that he hoped I ſhould prove a uſeful Servant, and well deſerve all the Favours he had already conferred upon me, or might do for the future.

The Reader may pleaſe to obſerve, that in the laſt Article for the Recovery of my Liberty, the Emperor ſtipulates to allow me a Quantity of Meat and Drink ſufficient for the Support of 1728 *Lilliputians*. Some time after, aſking a Friend at Court how they came to fix on that determinate Number; he told me, that his Majeſty's Mathematicians, having taken the Height of my Body by the help of a *Quadrant*, and, finding it to exceed theirs in the Proportion of twelve to one, they concluded from the Similarity of their Bodies, that mine muſt contain at leaſt 1728 of theirs, and conſequently would require as much Food as was neceſſary to ſupport that Number of *Lilliputians*. By which the Reader may conceive an Idea of the Ingenuity of that People, as well as the prudent and exact Oeconomy of ſo great a Prince.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

Mildendo, the Metropolis of Lilliput, *described, together with the Emperor's Palace. A Converſation between the Author and a Principal Secretary concerning the Affairs of that Empire: The Author's Offers to ſerve the Emperor in his Wars.*

THE firſt Requeſt I made, after I had obtained my Liberty, was that I might have Licence to ſee *Mildendo*, the Metropolis; which the Emperor eaſily granted me, but with a ſpecial Charge to do no Hurt, either to the Inhabitants or their Houſes. The People had Notice by Proclamation of my Deſign to viſit the Town. The Wall, which encompaſſed it, is two Foot and a half high, and at leaſt eleven Inches broad, ſo that a Coach and Horſes may be driven very ſafely round it; and it is flanked with ſtrong Towers at ten Foot diſtance. I ſtept over the great Weſtern Gate, and paſſed very gently, and ſideling through the two principal Streets, only in my ſhort Waiſtcoat, for fear of damaging the Roofs and Eves of the Houſes with the Skirts of my Coat. I walked with the utmoſt Circumſpection, to avoid treading upon any Stragglers, that might remain in the Streets, although the Orders were ſtrict, that all People ſhould keep in their Houſes, at their own Peril. The Garret-Windows and Tops of Houſes were ſo crouded with Spectators, that I thought in all my Travels I had not ſeen a more populous Place. The City is an exact Square, each Side of the Wall being five hundred Foot long. The two great Streets, which run croſs and divide it into four Quarters, are five Foot wide. The Lanes and Alleys which I could not enter, but only viewed them as I paſſed, are from twelve to eighteen Inches. The Town is capable of holding five hundred thouſand Souls. The Houſes are from three to five Stories. The Shops and Markets well provided.

The Emperor's Palace is in the Center of the City, where the two great Streets met. It is encloſed by a Wall of two Foot high, and twenty Foot diſtance from the Buildings. I had his Majeſty's Permiſſion to ſtep over this Wall; and the Space being ſo wide between that and the Palace, I could eaſily view it on every

every Side. The outward Court is a Square of forty Foot, and includes two other Courts: In the inmoſt are the Royal Apartments, which I was very deſirous to ſee, but found it extreamly difficult; for the great Gates, from one Square into another, were but eighteen Inches high, and ſeven Inches wide. Now the Buildings of the outer Court were at leaſt five Foot high, and it was impoſſible for me to ſtride over them, without infinite Damage to the Pile, though the Walls were ſtrongly built of hewn Stone, and four Inches thick. At the ſame time the Emperor had a great Deſire that I ſhould ſee the Magnificence of his Palace; but this I was not able to do 'till three Days after, which I ſpent in cutting down with my Knife, ſome of the largeſt Trees in the Royal Park, about an hundred Yards diſtant from the City. Of theſe Trees I made two Stools, each about three Foot high, and ſtrong enough to bear my Weight. The People having received Notice a ſecond time, I went again thro' the City to the Palace, with my two Stools in my Hands. When I came to the Side of the outer Court, I ſtood upon one Stool, and took the other in my Hand: This I lifted over the Roof, and gently ſet it down on the Space between the firſt and ſecond Court, which was eight Foot wide. I then ſtept over the Buildings very conveniently from one Stool to the other, and drew up the firſt after me with a hooked Stick. By this Contrivance I got into the inmoſt Court; and lying down upon my Side, I applied my Face to the Windows of the middle Stories, which were left open on purpoſe, and diſcovered the moſt ſplendid Apartments that can be imagined. There I ſaw the Empreſs, and the young Princes in their ſeveral Lodgings, with their chief Attendance about them. Her Imperial Majeſty was pleaſed to ſmile very graciouſly upon me, and gave me out of the Window her Hand to kiſs.

But I ſhall not anticipate the Reader with farther Deſcriptions of this Kind, becauſe I reſerve them for a greater Work, which is now almoſt ready for the Preſs, containing a general Deſcription of this Empire from its firſt Erection, thro' a long Series of Princes, with a particular Account of their Wars and Politicks, Laws, Learning, and Religion: Their Plants and Animals, their peculiar Manners and Cuſtoms, with other Matters very curious and uſeful; my chief Deſign at preſent being only to relate ſuch Events and Tranſactions as happened to the Publick

Publick or to myſelf, during a Reſidence of about nine Months in that Empire.

One Morning, about a Fortnight after I had obtain'd my Liberty, *Keldreſal*, principal Secretary (as they ſtyle him) of private Affairs, came to my Houſe, attended only by one Servant. He ordered his Coach to wait at a Diſtance, and deſired I would give him an Hour's Audience; which I readily conſented to, on account of his Quality and perſonal Merits, as well as the many good Offices he had done me during my Sollicitations at Court. I offered to lie down, that he might the more conveniently reach my Ear; but he choſe rather to let me hold him in my Hand during our Converſation. He began with Compliments on my Liberty, ſaid, he might pretend to ſome Merit in it: But, however, added, that if it had not been for the preſent Situation of Things at Court, perhaps I might not have obtained it ſo ſoon. For, ſaid he, as flouriſhing a Condition as we may appear to be in to Foreigners, we labour under two mighty Evils, a violent Faction at Home, and a Danger of an Invaſion by a moſt potent Enemy from abroad. As to the firſt, you are to underſtand, that for above ſeventy Moons paſt, there have been two ſtruggling Parties, in this Empire, under the Names of *Tramecksan*, and *Slamecksan*, from the high and low Heels on their Shoes, by which they diſtinguiſh themſelves. It is alledged indeed, that the high Heels are moſt agreeable to our antient Conſtitution: But, however, this be, his Majeſty hath determined to make uſe of only low Heels in the Adminiſtration of the Government, and all Offices in the Gift of the Crown, as you cannot but obſerve; and particularly, that his Majeſty's Imperial Heels are lower at leaſt by a *Drurr* than any of his Court; (*Drurr* is a Meaſure about the fourteenth Part of an Inch.) The Animoſities betwen theſe two Parties run ſo high, that they will neither eat nor drink, nor talk with each other. We compute the *Tramecksan*, or High-Heels, to exceed us in Number; but the Power is wholly on our Side. We apprehend his Imperial Highneſs, the Heir to the Crown, to have ſome Tendency towards the High-Heels; at leaſt, we can plainly diſcover that one of his Heels is higher than the other, which gives him a Hobble in his Gait. Now in the midſt of theſe inteſtine Diſquiets, we are threatened with an Invaſion from the Iſland of *Bleſuſcu*, which is the other great Empire of the Uni-

Univerſe, almoſt as large and powerful as this of his Majeſty. For as to what we heard you affirm, that there are other Kingdoms and States in the World, inhabited by human Creatures as large as yourſelf, our Philoſophers are in much Doubt, and would rather conjecture that you dropp'd from the Moon, or one of the Stars; becauſe it is certain, that an hundred Mortals of your Bulk wou'd, in a ſhort time, deſtroy all the Fruits and Cattle of his Majeſty's Dominions. Beſides, our Hiſtories of ſix thouſand Moons make no mention of any other Regions, than the two great Empires of *Lilliput* and *Bleſuſcu*. Which two mighty Powers have, as I was going to tell you, been ingaged in a moſt obſtinate War for ſix and thirty Moons paſt. It began upon the following Occaſion: It is allowed on all Hands, that the primitive Way of breaking Eggs, before we eat them, was upon the larger End: But his preſent Majeſty's Grandfather, while he was a Boy, going to eat an Egg, and breaking it according to the antient Practice, happening to cut one of his Fingers. Whereupon the Emperor, his Father, publiſhed an Edict, commanding all his Subjects, upon great Penalties, to break their ſmaller End of their Eggs. The People ſo highly reſented this Law, that our Hiſtories tell us, there have been ſix Rebellions raiſed on that Account; wherein one Emperor had loſt his Life, and another his Crown. Theſe civil Commotions were conſtantly fomented by the Monarchs of *Bleſuſcu*; and when they were quelled, the Exiles always fled for Refuge to that Empire. It is computed, that eleven thouſand Perſons have, at ſeveral times, ſuffered Death, rather than ſubmit to break their Eggs at the ſmaller End. Many hundred large Volumes have been publiſhed on this Controverſy; but the Books of the *Big-Endians* have been long forbidden, and the whole Party rendered incapable by Law of holding Employments. During the Courſe of theſe Troubles, the Emperors of *Bleſuſcu* did frequently expoſtulate by their Embaſſadors, accuſing us of making a Schiſm in Religion, by offending againſt a fundamental Doctrine of our great Prophet *Luſtrog*, in the fifty-fourth Chapter of the *Blundecral*, (which is their *Alcoran*.) This, however, is thought to be a mere Strain upon the Text: For the Words are theſe: *That all true Believers ſhall break their Eggs at the convenient End:* And which is the convenient End, ſeems, in my humble Opinion to be left to every Man's Conſcience, or at leaſt in the Power of the chief Ma-

gi-

gistrate to determine. Now, the *Big-Endians* Exiles have found so much Credit in the Emperor of *Blefuscu*'s Court, and so much private Assistance and Encouragement from their Party here at Home, that a bloody War hath been carried on between the two Empires for six and thirty Moons with various Success; during which time, we have lost forty capital Ships, and a much greater Number of smaller Vessels, together with thirty thousand of our best Seamen and Soldiers; and the Damage received by the Enemy is reckoned to be somewhat greater than ours. However, they have now equipped a numerous Fleet, and are just preparing to make a Descent upon us; and his Imperial Majesty, placing great Confidence in your Valour and Strength, hath commanded me to lay this Account of his Affairs before you

I desired the Secretary to present my humble Duty to the Emperor, and to let him know, that I thought it would not become me, who was a Foreigner, to interfere with Parties; but I was ready, with the Hazard of my Life, to defend his Person and State against all Invaders.

CHAP. V.

The Author by an extraordinary Stratagem, prevents an Invasion. A high Title of Honour is conferred upon him. Embassadors arrive from the Emperor of Blefuscu, *and sue for Peace. The Empress's Apartment on fire by an Accident; the Author instrumental in saving the rest of the Palace.*

THE Empire of *Blefuscu* is an Island, situated to the North North-East Side of *Lilliput*, from whence it is parted only by a Channel of eight hundred Yards wide. I had not yet seen it, and upon this Notice of an intended Invasion, I avoided appearing on that Side of the Coast, for fear of being discovered by some of the Enemy's Ships, who had received no Intelligence of me, all Intercourse between the two Empires having been strictly forbidden during the War, upon Pain of Death, and an Embargo laid by our Emperor upon all

Veſſels whatſoever. I communicated to his Majeſty a Project I had formed of ſeizing the Enemy's whole Fleet: Which, as our Scouts aſſured us, lay at Anchor in the Harbour ready to ſail with the firſt fair Wind. I conſulted the moſt experienced Seamen, upon the Depth of the Channel, which they had often plummed, who told me, that in the middle, at high-Water, it was ſeventy *Glumgluffs* deep. Which is about ſix Foot of *European* Meaſure; and the reſt of it fifty *Glumgluffs* at moſt. I walked towards the North-Eaſt Coaſt over againſt *Bleſuſcu*; and lying down behind a Hillock, took out my ſmall Pocket-Perſpective-Glaſs, and viewed the Enemy's Fleet at Anchor, conſiſting of about fifty Men of War, and a great Number of Tranſports: I then came back to my Houſe, and gave Order (for which I had a Warrant) for a great Quantity of the ſtrongeſt Cable and Bars of Iron. The Cable was about as thick as Packthread, and the Bars of the Length and Size of a Kniting-needle. I trebled the Cable to make it ſtronger, and for the ſame Reaſon, I twiſted three of the Iron Bars together, binding the Extremities into a Hook. Having thus fixed fifty Hooks to as many Cables, I went back to the North-Eaſt Coaſt, and putting off my Coat, Shoes, and Stockings, walked into the Sea in my leathern Jerkin, about an Hour before High-Water. I waded with what Haſte I could, and ſwam in the middle about thirty Yards, 'till I felt Ground; I arrived to the Fleet in leſs than half an Hour. The Enemy was ſo frighted when they ſaw me, that they leaped out of their Ships, and ſwam to Shoar, where there could not be fewer than thirty thouſand Souls. I then took my Tackling, and faſtening a Hook to the Hole at the Prow of each, I tied all the Cords together at the End. While I was thus employed the Enemy diſcharged ſeveral thouſand Arrows, many of which ſtuck in my Hands and Face; and, beſides the exceſſive Smart, gave me much Diſturbance in my Work. My greateſt Apprehenſion was for mine Eyes, which I ſhould have infallibly loſt, if I had not ſuddenly thought of an Expedient. I kept among other little Neceſſaries a pair of Spectacles in a private Pocket, which, as I obſerved before, had eſcaped the Emperor's Searchers. Theſe I took out and faſtend as ſtrongly as I could upon my Noſe, and thus armed went on boldly with my Work in Spite of the Enemy's Arrows, many of which ſtruck againſt the Glaſſes of my Spectacles, but witout any other Effect, further than a little

little to diſcompoſe them. I had now faſtened all the Hooks, and taking the Knot in my Hand, began to pull; but not a Ship would ſtir, for they were all too faſt held by their Anchors, ſo that the bold Part of my Enterprize remained. I therefore let go the Cord, and leaving the Hooks fixed to the Ships, I reſolutely cut with my Knife the Cables that faſtened the Anchors, receiving above two hundred Shots in my Face and Hands; then I took up the knotted End of the Cables to which my Hooks were tied, and with great Eaſe drew fifty of the Enemy's largeſt Men of War after me.

The *Bleſuſcudians*, who had not the leaſt Imagination of what I intended, where at firſt conſounded with Aſtoniſhment. They had ſeen me cut the Cables, and thought my Deſign was only to let the Ships run a-drift, or fall foul on each other: But when they perceived the whole Fleet moving in Order, and ſaw me pulling at the End, they ſet up ſuch a Scream of Grief and Deſpair, that it is almoſt impoſſible to deſcribe or conceive. When I had got out of Danger, I ſtopp'd a while to pick out the Arrows that ſtuck in my Hands and Face; and rubbed on ſome of the ſame Ointment that was given me at my firſt Arrival, as I have formerly mentioned. I then took off my Spectacles, and waiting about an Hour 'till the Tide was a little fallen, I waded through the middle with my Cargo; and arrived ſafe at the Royal Port of *Lilliput*.

The Emperor and his whole Court ſtood on the Shoar expecting the Iſſue of this great Adventure. They ſaw the Ships move forward in a large Half-Moon, but could not diſcern me, who was up to my Breaſt in Water. When I advanced to the middle of the Channel, they were yet in more Pain, becauſe I was under Water to my Neck. The Emperor concluded me to be drowned, and that the Enemy's Fleet was approaching in a hoſtile Manner: But he was ſoon eaſed of his Fears, for the Channel growing ſhallower, every ſtep that I made, I came in a ſhort time within hearing, and holding up the End of the Cable, by which the Fleet was faſtened, I cryed in a loud Voice, Long live the moſt puiſſant Emperor of *Lilliput*! This great Prince received me at my Landing with all poſſible Encomiums, and created me a *Nardac* upon the Spot, which is the higheſt Title of Honour among them.

His

His Majesty desired I would take some other Opportunity of bringing all the rest of his Enemy's Ships into his Ports. And so unmeasurable is the Ambition of Princes, that he seemed to think of nothing less than reducing the whole Empire of *Blefuscu* into a Province, and governing it by a Vice-Roy; of destroying the *Big-Endian* Exiles, and compelling that People to break the smaller End of their Eggs, by which he would remain the sole Monarch of the whole World. But I endeavour'd to divert him from his Design, by many Arguments drawn from the Topicks of Policy as well as Justice: And I plainly protested that I would never be an Instrument of bringing a free and brave People into Slavery. And when the Matter was debated in Council, the wisest Part of the Ministry were of my Opinion.

This open bold Declaration of mine was so opposite to the Schemes and Politicks of his Imperial Majesty, that he could never forgive it; he mentioned it in a very artful Manner at Council, where I was told that some of the wisest appeared, at least, by their Silence, to be of my Opinion; but others, who were my secret Enemies, could not forbear some Expressions, which by a side-wind reflected on me. And from this time began an Intrigue between his Majesty, and a Junto of Ministers maliciously bent against me, which broke out in less than two Months, and had like to have ended in my utter Destruction. Of so little Weight are the greatest Services to Princes, when put into the Ballance with a Refusal to gratify their Passions.

About three Weeks after this Exploit, there arrived a solemn Embassy from *Blefuscu*, with humble Offers of a Peace; which was soon concluded upon Conditions very advantageous to our Emperor, wherewith I shall not trouble the Reader. There were six Ambassadors, with a Train of about five hundred Persons, and their Entry was very magnificent, suitable to the Grandeur of their Master, and the Importance of their Business. When their Treaty was finished, wherein I did them several good Offices by the Credit I now had, or at least appeared to have at Court, their Excellencies, who were privately told how much I had been their Friend, made me a Visit in Form. They began with many Compliments upon my Valour and Generosity, invited me to

that

that Kingdom in the Emperor their Master's Name, and desired me to shew them some Proofs of my Prodigious Strength, of which they had heard so many Wonders; wherein I readily obliged them, but shall not trouble the Reader with the Particulars.

When I had for some time entertained their Excellencies, to their infinite Satisfaction and Surprize, I desired they would do me the Honour to present my most humble Respects to the Emperor their Master, the Renown of whose Virtues had so justly filled the World with Admiration, and whose Royal Person I resolved to attend before I returned to my own Country: Accordingly, the next time I had the Honour to see our Emperor, I desired his general Licence to wait on the *Blefuscudian* Monarch, which he was pleased to grant me, as I could plainly perceive, in a very cold Manner; but could not guess the Reason, 'till I had a Whisper from a certain Person, that *Flimnap* and *Bolgolam* had represented my Intercourse with those Ambassadors as a Mark of Disaffection, from which I am sure my Heart was wholly free. And this was the first time I began to conceive some imperfect Idea of Courts and Ministers.

It is to be observed, that these Ambassadors spoke to me by an Interpreter, the Languages of both Empires differing as much from each other as any two in *Europe*, and each Nation priding itself upon the Antiquity, Beauty, and Energy of their own Tongues, with an avowed Contempt for that of their Neighbour; yet our Emperor standing upon the Advantage he had got by the Seisure of their Fleet, obliged them to deliver their Credentials, and make their Speech in the *Lilliputian* Tongue. And it must be confessed, that from the great Intercourse of Trade and Commerce between both Realms, from the continual Reception of Exiles, which is mutal among them, and from the Custom in each Empire to send their young Nobility and richer Gentry to the other, in order to polish themselves by seeing the World, and understanding Men and Manners; there are few Persons of Distinction, or Merchants, or Seamen, who dwell in the maritime Parts, but what can hold Conversation in both Tongues; as I found some Weeks after, when I went to pay my Respects to the Emperor of *Blefuscu*, which in the midst of great Misfortunes, through the Malice of my Enemies, proved a very happy Adventure

to me, as I ſhall relate in its proper Place.

The Reader may remember, that when I ſigned thoſe Articles upon which I recovered my Liberty, there were ſome which I diſliked upon Account of their being too ſervile, neither could any thing but an extreme Neceſſity have forced me to ſubmit. But being now a *Nardac* of the higheſt Rank in that Empire, ſuch Offices were looked upon as below my Dignity, and the Emperor (to do him Juſtice) never once mentioned them to me. However, it was not long before I had an Opportunity of doing his Majeſty, at leaſt, as I then thought, a moſt ſignal Service. I was alarm'd at Midnight with the Cries of many hundred People at my Door; by which being ſuddenly awaked, I was in ſome kind of Terror. I heard the Word *Burglum* repeated inceſſantly: Several of the Emperor's Court making their Way through the Crowd, intreated me to come immediately to the Palace, where her Imperial Majeſty's Apartment was on Fire, by the Careleſsneſs of a Maid of Honour who fell aſleep while ſhe was reading a Romance. I got up in an Inſtant; and Orders being given to clear the Way before me, and it being likewiſe a Moon-ſhine Night, I made a Shift to get to the Palace, without ſtampling on any of the People. I found they had already applyed Ladders to the Walls of the Apartmant, and were well provided with Buckets, but the Water was at ſome Diſtance. Theſe Buckets were about the ſize of a large Thimble, and the poor People ſupplied me with them as faſt as they could; but the Flame was ſo violent that they did but little good. I might eaſily have ſtifled it with my Coat, which I unfortunately left behind me for Haſte, and came away only in my leathern Jerkin. The Caſe ſeemed wholly deſperate and deplorable, and this magnificent Palace would have infallibly been burnt down to the Ground, if, by a preſence of Mind, unuſual to me, I had not ſuddenly thought of an Expedient. I had the Evening before drank plentifully of a moſt delicious Wine, called *Glimigrim*, (the *Bleſuſcudians* call it *Flunec*, but our's is eſteemed the better ſort) which is very diuretick. By the luckieſt Chance in the World I had not diſcharged myſelf of any part of it. The Heat I had contracted by coming very near the Flames, and by my labouring to quench them made the Wine begin to operate by Urine; which I voided in ſuch a Quantity, and applied ſo well to the proper Places, that

that in three Minutes the Fire was wholly extinguiſhed, and the reſt of that noble Pile, which had coſt ſo many Ages in erecting, preſerved from Deſtruction.

It was now Day-light, and I returned to my Houſe, without waiting to congratulate with the Emperor; becauſe, although I had done a very eminent Piece of Service, yet I could not tell how his Majeſty might reſent the Manner by which I had performed it: For, by the Fundamental Laws of the Realm, it is Capital in any Perſon, of what Quality ſoever, to make Water within the Precincts of the Palace. But I was a little comforted by a Meſſage from his Majeſty, that he would give Orders to the grand Juſticiary for paſſing my Pardon in Form; which however, I could not obtain. And I was privately aſſured, the Empreſs, conceiving the greateſt Abhorrence of what I had done, removed to the moſt diſtant Side of the Court, firmly reſolved that thoſe Buildings ſhould never be repaired for her Uſe; and, in the Preſence of her chief Confidents, could not forbear vowing Revenge.

CHAP. VI.

Of the Inhabitants of Lilliput; *their Learning, Laws, and Cuſtoms, the Manner of educating their Children. The Author's Way of Living in that Country. His Vindication of a great Lady.*

ALTHO' I intend to leave the Deſcription of this Empire to a particular Treatiſe, yet in the mean time, I am content to gratify the curious Reader with ſome general Ideas. As the common Size of the Natives is ſomewhat under ſix Inches high, ſo there is an exact Proportion in all other Animals, as well as Plants and Trees: For Inſtance, the talleſt Horſes and Oxen are between four and five Inches in Height, the Sheep an Inch and a half, more or leſs; their Geeſe about the Bigneſs of a Sparrow, and ſo the ſeveral Gradations downwards, 'till you come to the ſmalleſt, which to my Sight were almoſt inviſible; but Nature

ture hath adapted the Eyes of the *Lilliputians* to all Objects proper for their View: They ſee with great Exactneſs but at no great Diſtance. And to ſhew the ſharpneſs of their Sight towards Objects that are near, I have been much pleaſed obſerving a Cook pulling a Lark, which was not ſo large as a common Fly; and a young Girl threading an inviſible Needle with inviſible Silk. Their talleſt Trees are about ſeven Foot high: I mean ſome of thoſe in the great royal Park, the Tops whereof I could but juſt reach with my Fiſt clinched. The other Vegetables are in the ſame Proportion; but this I leave to the Reader's Imagination.

I ſhall ſay but little at preſent of their Learning: Which for many Ages hath flouriſhed in all its Branches among them: But their Manner of writing is very peculiar, being neither from the left to the right, like the *Europeans*; nor from right to the left, like the *Arabians*; nor from down to up, like the *Caſcagians*; but aſlant from one Corner of the Paper to the other, like Ladies in *England*.

They bury their Dead with their Heads directly downwards, becauſe they hold an Opinion, that in eleven thouſand Moons they are all to riſe again, in which Period the Earth (which they conceive to be flat) will turn upſide-down, and by this Means they ſhall, at their Reſurrection, be found ready ſtanding on their Feet. The Learned among them confeſs the Abſurdity of this Doctrine, but the Practice ſtill continues, in Compliance to the Vulgar.

There are ſome Laws and Cuſtoms in this Empire very peculiar; and if they were not ſo directly contrary to thoſe of of my own dear Country, I ſhould be tempted to ſay a little in their Juſtification. It is only to be wiſhed, they were as well executed. The firſt I ſhall mention, relates to Informers. All Crimes againſt the State are puniſhed here with the utmoſt Severity; but if the Perſon accuſed making his Innocence plainly to appear upon his Tryal, the Accuſor is immediately put to an ignominious Death; and out of his Goods or Lands, the innocent Perſon is quadruply recompenced for the loſs of his Time, for the Danger he underwent, for the Hardſhip of his Impriſonment, and for all the Charges he hath been at in making his Defence. Or, if that Fund be deficient, it is largely ſupplyed by the the Crown. The Emperor does alſo con-

fer

fer on him some publick Mark of his Favour, and Proclamation is made of his Innocence through the whole City.

They look upon Fraud as a greater Crime than Theft, and therefore seldom fail but to punish it with Death; for they alledge, that Care and Vigilance, with a very common Understanding, may preserve a Man's Goods from Thieves, but Honesty has no Fence against superior Cunning: And since it is necessary that there should be a perpetual Intercourse of buying and selling, and dealing upon Credit, where Fraud is permitted or connived at, or hath no Law to punish it, the honest Dealer is always undone, and the Knave gets the Advantage. I remember when I was once interceding with the King for a Criminal, who had wronged his Master of a great Sum of Money, which he had received by Order, and ran away with; and happening to tell his Majesty, by Way of Extenuation, that it was only a Breach of Trust; the Emperor thought it monstrous in me to offer, as a Defence, the greatest Aggravation of the Crime; and truly I had little to say in Return, farther than the common Answer, that different Nations had different Customs; for, I confess, I was heartily ashamed.

Although we usually call Reward and Punishment, the two Hinges upon which all Government turns, yet I could never observe this Maxim to be put in Practice by any Nation except that of *Lilliput*. Whoever can there bring sufficient Proof that he hath strictly observed the Laws of his Country, for seventy three Moons, has a Claim to certain Privileges, according to his Quality and Condition of Life, with a proportionable Sum of Money out of a Fund appropriated for that Use: He likewise acquires the Title of *Snilpal*, or *Legal*, which is added to his Name, but does not descend to his Posterity: And these People thought it a prodigious Defect of Policy among us, when I told them that our Laws were enforced only by Penalties, without any mention of Reward. It is upon this Account that the Image of Justice, in their Courts of Judicature, is formed with six Eyes, two before, as many behind, and on each Side one, to signify Circumspection; with a Bag of Gold open in her Right Hand, and a Sword sheathed in her Left, to shew she is more disposed to reward than to punish.

In chuſing Perſons for all Employments, they have more Regard to good Morals than to great Abilities; for, ſince Government is neceſſary to Mankind, they believe that the common Size of human Underſtandings is fitted to ſome Station or other, and that Providence never intended to make the Management of publick Affairs a Miſtery, to be comprehended only by a few Perſons of ſublime Genius, of which there are ſeldom three born in an Age: But they ſuppoſe Truth, Juſtice, Temperance, and the like, to be in every Man's Power; the Practice of which Virtues, aſſiſted by Experience and a good Intention, would qualify any Man for the Service of his Country, except where a Courſe of Study is required: But they thought the Want of moral Virtues, was ſo far from being ſupplied by ſuperior Endowments of the Mind, that Employments could never be put into ſuch dangerous Hands as thoſe of Perſons ſo qualified; and at leaſt, that the Miſtakes, committed by Ignorance in a virtuous Diſpoſition, would never be of ſuch fatal Conſequence to the Publick Weal, as the Practices of a Man whoſe Inclinations led him to be corrupt, and had great Abilities to manage and multiply, and defend his Corruptions.

In like Manner, the Diſbelief of a Divine Providene renders a Man uncapable of holding any publick Station; for ſince Kings avow themſelves to be the Deputies of Providence, the *Lilliputians* think nothing can be more abſurd, than for a Prince to employ ſuch Men as diſown the Authority under which he acts.

In relating theſe and the following Laws, I would only be underſtood to mean the original Inſtitutions, and not the moſt ſcandalous Corruptions into which theſe People are fallen, by the degenerate Nature of Man. For as to that infamous Practice of acquiring great Employments by dancing on the Ropes, or Badges of Favour and Diſtinction by leaping over Sticks, and creeping under them; the Reader is to obſerve, that they were firſt introduced by the Grandfather of the Emperor now reigning, and grew to the preſent Height, by the gradual Increaſe of Party and Faction.

Ingratitude is among them a capital Crime, as we read it to have been in ſome Countries; for they reaſon thus, that

that whoever makes ill Returns to his Benefactor, muſt needs be a common Enemy to the reſt of Mankind, from whom he hath received no Obligations, and therefore ſuch a Man is not fit to live.

Their Notions relating to the Duties of Parents and Children, differ extremely from ours. For, ſince the Conjunction of Male and Female is founded upon the great Law of Nature, in order to propagate and continue the Species, the *Lilliputians* will needs have it, that Men and Women are joined together like other Animals, by the Motives of Concupiſcence; and that their Tenderneſs towards their Young proceeds from the like natural Principle: For which Reaſon they will never allow, that a Child is under any Obligation to his Father for begetting him, or his Mother for bringing him into the World, which, conſidering the Miſeries of human Life, was neither a Benefit in itſelf, or intended ſo by his Parents, whoſe Thoughts in their Love-Encounters were otherwiſe employed. Upon theſe and the like Reaſonings, their Opinion is, that Parents are the laſt of all others to be truſted with the Education of their own Children: And therefore, they have in every Town publick Nurſeries, where all Parents, except Cottagers and Labourers, are obliged to ſend their Infants of both Sexes, to be reared and educated when they come to the Age of twenty Moons, at which time they are ſuppoſed to have ſome Rudiments of Docility. Theſe Schools are of ſeveral Kinds, ſuited to different Qualities, and to both Sexes. They have certain Profeſſors well ſkilled in preparing Children for ſuch a Condition of Life, as befits the Rank of their Parents, and their own Capacities as well as Inclinations. I ſhall firſt ſay ſomething of the Male Nurſeries, and then of the Female.

The Nurſeries for Males of noble or eminent Birth, are provided with grave and learned Profeſſors, and their ſeveral Deputies. The Clothes and Food of the Children are plain and ſimple. They are bred up in the Principles of Honour, Juſtice, Courage, Modeſty, Clemency, Religion, and Love of their Country; they are always employed in ſome Buſineſs, except in the Times of eating and ſleeping, which are very ſhort, and two Hours for Diverſions, conſiſting of bodily Exerciſes. They are dreſſed by Men 'till four Years of Age, and then

then are obliged to dreſs themſelves, although their Quality be ever ſo great; and the Women Attendants, who are aged proportionably to ours at fifty, perform only the moſt menial Offices. They are never ſuffered to converſe with Servants, but go together in ſmall or greater Numbers to take their Diverſions, and always in the Preſence of a Profeſſor, or one of his Deputies; whereby they avoid thoſe early bad Impreſſions, of Folly and Vice to which our Children are ſubject. Their Parents are ſuffered to ſee them only twice a Year; the Viſit is to laſt but an Hour. They are allowed to kiſs the Child at meeting and parting; but a Profeſſor, who always ſtands by on thoſe Occaſions, will not ſuffer them to whiſper, or uſe any fondling Expreſſions, or bring any Preſents of Toys, Sweat-meats, and the like.

The Penſion from each Family for the Education and Entertainment of a Child, upon Failure of due Payment, is levied by the Emperor's Officers.

The Nurſeries for Children of ordinary Gentlemen, Merchants, Traders, and Handicrafts, are managed proportionably after the ſame Manner; only thoſe deſigned for Trades, are put out Apprentices at eleven Years old, whereas thoſe of Perſons of Quality continue in their Nurſeries 'till fifteen, which anſwers to one and twenty with us: But the Confinement is gradually leſſened for the laſt three Years.

In the Female Nurſeries, the young Girls of Quality are educated much like the Males, only they are dreſſed by orderly Servants of their own Sex; but always in the Preſence of a Profeſſor or Deputy, 'till they come to dreſs themſelves, which is at five Years old. And if it be found that theſe Nurſes, ever preſume to entertain the Girls with frightful or fooliſh Stories, or the common Follies practiſed by Chamber-Maids among us, they are publickly whipped thrice about the City, impriſoned for a Year, and baniſhed for Life to the moſt deſolate Part of the Country. Thus the young Ladies there, are as much aſhamed of being Cowards and Fools as the Men, and deſpiſe all perſonal Ornaments beyond Decency and Cleanlineſs: Neither did I perceive any Difference in their Education, made by their Difference of Sex, only that the Exerciſes of the Females were not altogether ſo robuſt; and that ſome Rules were

given

given them relating to domestick Life, and a smaller Compass of Learning was enjoined them: For the Maxim is, that among People of Quality, a Wife should be always a reasonble and agreeable Companion, because she cannot always be young. When the Girls are twelve Years old, which among them is the marriageable Age, their Parents or Guardians take them Home, with great Expressions of Gratitude to the Professors, and seldom without Tears, of the young Lady and her Companions.

In the Nurseries of Females of the meaner Sort, the Children are instructed in all Kinds of Works, proper for their Sex, and their several Degrees: Those intended for Apprentices, are dismiss'd at nine Years old, the rest are kept to thirteen.

The meaner Families, who have Children at these Nurseries, are obliged, besides their annual Pension, which is as low as possible, to return to the Steward of the Nursery a small monthly Share of their Gettings, to be a Portion for the Child; and therefore all Parents are limited in their Expences by the Law. For the *Lilliputians* think nothing can be more unjust, than for People in Subserviance to their own Appetites, to bring Children into the World, and leave the Burthen of supporting them on the Publick. As to Persons of Quality, they give Security to appropriate a certain Sum for each Child, suitable to their Condition; and these Funds are always managed with good Husbandry and the most exact Justice.

The Cottagers, and Labourers keep their Children at Home, their Business being only to till and cultivate the Earth, and therefore their Education is of little Consequence to the Publick: But the Old and Diseased among them are supported by Hospitals: For Begging is a Trade unknown in this Kingdom.

And here it may perhaps divert the curious Reader, to give some Account of my Domestick, and my Manner of Living in this Country, during a Residence of nine Months and thirteen Days. Having a Head mechanically turned, and being likewise forced by Necessity, I had made for myself a Table and Chair convenient enough, out of the largest Trees in the Royal Park. Two hundred Sempstresses were employed to make me Shirts, and Linnen for Bed and Table, all of the strongest and coarsest Kind they

they could get; which, however, they were forced to quilt together in several Folds, for the Thickest was some Degrees finer than Lawn. Their Linnen is usually three Inches wide, and three Foot make a Piece. The Sempstresses took my Measure as I lay on the Ground, one standing at my Neck, and another at my Mid-Leg, with a strong Cord extended, that each held by the End, I while the third measured the Length of the Cord with a Rule of an Inch long. Then they measured my Right Thumb, and desired no more; for by a mathematical Computation, that twice round the Thumb is once round the Wrist, and so on to the Neck and the Waist, and by the Help of my old Shirt, which I displayed on the Ground before them for a Pattern, they fitted me exactly. Three hundred Taylors were employed in the same Manner to make me Cloaths; but they had another Contrivance for taking my Measure. I kneeled down and they raised a Ladder from the Ground to my Neck; upon this Ladder one of them mounted, and let fall a Plumb-Line from my Collar to the Floor, which just answered the Length of my Coat; but my Waist and Arms I measured myself. When my Cloathes were finished, which was done in my House, (for the largest of theirs would not be able to hold them) they looked like the Patch-Work made by the Ladies in *England*, only that mine were all of a Colour.

I had three hundred Cooks to dress my Victuals, in little convenient Huts built about my House, where they and their Families lived, and prepared me two Dishes a-piece. I took up twenty Waiters in my Hand, and placed them on the Table, an hundred more attended below on the Ground, some with Dishes of Meat, and some with Barrels of Wine, and other Liquors, slung on their Shoulders; all which the Waiters above drew up as I wanted, in a very ingenious Manner, by certain Cords, as we draw the Bucket up a Well in *Europe*. A Dish of their Meat was a good Mouthful, and a Barrel of their Liquor a reasonable Draught. Their Mutton yields to ours, but their Beef is excellent. I have had a Sirloin so large, that I have been forced to make three Bits of it; but this is rare. My Servants were astonished to see me eat it Bones and all, as in our Country we do the Leg of a Lark. Their Geese and Turkeys I usually eat at a Mouthful, and I must confess they far exceed

ours.

ours. Of their ſmaller Fowl I could take up twenty or thirty at the End of my Knife.

One Day his Imperial Majeſty, being informed of my Way of living, deſired that himſelf and his Royal Conſort, with the young Princes of the Blood of both Sexes, might have the Happineſs (as he was pleaſed to call it) of dining with me. They came accordingly, and I placed 'em upon Chairs of State on my Table, juſt over againſt me, with their Guards about them. *Flimnap* the Lord High Treaſurer attended there likewiſe, with his white Staff; and I obſerved he often looked on me with a ſour Countenance, which I would not ſeem to regard, but eat more than uſual, in honour to my dear Country, as well as to fill the Court with Admiration. I have ſome private Reaſons to believe, that this Viſit from his Majeſty gave *Flimnap* an Opportunity of doing me ill Offices to his Maſter. That Miniſter had always been my ſecret Enemy, though he outwardly careſſed me more than was uſual to the Moroſeneſs of his Nature. He repreſented to the Emperor the low Condition of his Treaſury; that he was forced to take up Money at great Diſcount; that Exchequer Bills would not circulate under nine *per Cent.* below Par; that in ſhort, I had coſt his Majeſty above a Million and a half of *Sprugs*, (their greateſt Gold Coin, about the Bigneſs of a Spangle;) and upon the whole, that it would be adviſeable in the Emperor to take the firſt fair Occaſion of diſmiſſing me.

I am here obliged to vindicate the Reputation of an excellent Lady, who was an innocent Sufferer upon my Account. The Treaſurer took a Fancy to be jealous of his Wife, from the Malice of ſome evil Tongues, who informed him that her Grace had taken a violent Affection for my Perſon; and the Court-Scandal ran for ſometime, that ſhe once came privately to my Lodging. This I ſolemnly declare to be a moſt infamous Falſhood, without any Grounds, farther than that her Grace was pleaſed to treat me with all innocent Marks of Freedom and Friendſhip. I own ſhe came often to my Houſe, but always publickly, nay ever without three more in the Coach, who were uſually her Siſter and young Daughter, and ſome particular Acquaintance; but this was common to many other Ladies of the Court. And I ſtill appeal to my Servants round, whether they at any time ſaw a Coach at my Door,

Door, without knowing what Persons were in it. On those Occasions, when a Servant had given me Notice, my Custom was to go immediately to the Door: And, after paying my Respects, to take up the Coach and two Horses very carefully in my Hands, (for if there were six Horses, the Postillion always unharnessed four) and place them on a Table, where I had fixed a moveable Rim quite round, of five Inches high, to prevent Accidents. And I have often had four Coaches and Horses at once on my Table full of Company, while I sat in my Chair, leaning my Face towards them; and when I was engaged with one Sett, the Coachman would gently drive the others round my Table. I have passed many an Afternoon very agreeable in these Conversations. But I defy the Treasurer, or his two Informers, (I will name them, and let 'em make their best of it) *Clustril* and *Drunlo*, to prove that any Person ever came to me *incognito*, except the Secretary *Reldresal*, who was sent by express Command of his Imperal Majesty, as I have before related. I should not have dwelt so long upon this Particular, if it had not been a Point wherein the Reputation of a great Lady is so nearly concerned, to say nothing of my own; though I then had the Honour to be a *Nardac*, which the Treasurer himself is not; for all the World knows that he is only a *Glumglum*, a Title inferior by one Degree, as that of a Marquis is to a Duke in *England*, although I allow he preceded me in right of his Post. These false Informations, which I afterwards came to the Knowledge of, by an Accident not proper to mention, made *Flimnap*, the Treasurer, shew his Lady, for some time, an ill Countenance, and me a worse; and although he were at last undeceived and reconciled to her, yet I lost all Credit with him, and found my Interest decline very fast with the Emperor himself, who was indeed too much governed by that Favourite.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The Author, being informed of a Design to accuse him of High Treason, makes his Escape to Blefuscu. *His Reception there.*

BEFORE I proceed to give an Account of my leaving this Kingdom, it may be proper to inform the Reader of a private Intrigue which had been for two Months forming against me.

I had been hitherto all my Life a Stranger to Courts, for which I was unqualified by the Meanness of my Condition. I had indeed heard and read enough of the Dispositions of great Princes and Ministers; but never expected to have found such terrible Effects of them in so remote a Country, governed, as I thought, by very different Maxims from those in *Europe*.

When I was just preparing to pay my Attendance on the Emperor of *Blefuscu*, a considerable Person at Court (to whom I had been very serviceable at a time when he lay under the highest Displeasure of his Imperial Majesty) came to my House very privately at Night in a close Chair, and, without sending his Name, desired Admittance: The Chairmen where dismissed; I put the Chair, with his Lordship in it, into my Coat-Pocket; and giving Orders to a trusty Servant to say I was indisposed and gone to sleep, I fastened the Door of my House, placed the Chair on the Table, according to my usual Custom, and sate down by it. After the common Salutations, were over, observing his Lordship's Countenance full of Concern; and enquiring into the Reason, he desired I would hear him with Patience in a Matter that highly concerned my Honour and my Life. His Speech was to the following Effect, for I took Notes of it as soon as he left me.

You are to know, said he, that several Committees of Council have been lately called in the most private Manner on your Account: And it is but two

Days since his Imperial Majesty came to a full Resolution.

CHAP. VII.

You are very sensible that *Skyris Bolgolam* (*Galbet* or High Admiral) hath been your mortal Enemy almost ever since your Arrival: His original Reasons I know not; but his Hatred is much encreased since your great Success against *Blefuscu*, by which his Glory, as Admiral, is much obscured. This Lord, in Conjunction with *Flimnap*, the high Treasurer, whose Enmity against you is notorious on Account of his Lady, *Limtoc* the General, *Lalcon* the Chamberlain, and *Balmuff* the grand Judiciary, have prepared Articles of Impeachment against you, for Treason, and other capital Crimes.

This Preface made me so impatient, being conscious of my own Merits and Innocence, that I was going to interrupt: When he entreated me to be silent, and thus proceeded

Out of Gratitude for the Favours you have done me, I procured Information of the whole Proceedings, and a Copy of the Articles, wherein I venture my Head for your Service.

Articles of Impeachment against Quinbus Flestrine, (*the* Man-Mountain.)

ARTICLE I.

WHEREAS, by a Statute made in the Reign of his Imperial Majesty *Calin Deffar Plune*, it is enacted, that whoever shall make Water within the Precincts of the Royal Palace, shall be liable to the Pains and Penalties of high Treason: Notwithstanding the said *Quinbus Flestrine*, in open Breach of the said Law, under Colour of extinguishing the Fire, kindled in the Apartment of his Majesty's dear Imperial Consort, did maliciously, traiterously, and devilishly, by discharge of his Urine, put out the the said Fire kindled in the said Apartment, lying and being within the Precincts of the said Royal Palace, against the Statute in that Case provided, *&c.* against the Duty, *&c.*

ARTICLE II.

That the said *Quinbus Flestrine* having brought the Imperial Fleet of *Blefuscu* into the Royal Port, and being afterwards commanded by his Imperial Majesty to seize all the other Ships of the said Empire of *Blefuscu*, and reduce that Empire to a Province to be governed by a Vice-Roy from hence, and to destroy and

put

put to Death not only all the *Big-Endian Exiles*, but likewise all the People of that Empire, who would not immediately forsake the *Big-Endian* Heresy: He the said *Flestrine*, like a false Traitor against his most Auspicious, Serene, Imperial Majesty, did petition to be excused from the said Service, upon pretence of Unwillingness to force the Consciences, or destroy the Liberties and Lives of an Innocent People.

ARTICLE III.

That, whereas certain Embassadors arrived from the Court of *Blefuscu*, to sue for Peace in his Majesty's Court: He the said *Flestrine* did, like a false Traitor, aid, abet, comfort and divert the said Embassadors, although he knew them to be Servants to a Prince who was lately an open Enemy to his Imperial Majesty, and in open War against his said Majesty.

ARTICLE IV.

That the said *Quinbus Flestrine*, contrary to the Duty of a faithful Subject, is now preparing to make a Voyage to the Court and Empire of *Blefuscu*, for which he hath received only verbal Licence from his Imperial Majesty; and under Colour of the said Licence doth falsly and traiterously intend to take the said Voyage, and thereby to aid, comfort, and abet the Emperor of *Blefuscu*, so late an Enemy, and in open War with his Imperial Majesty aforesaid.

There are some other Articles, but these are the most important, of which I have read you an Abstract.

In the several Debates upon this Impeachment, it must be confessed that his Majesty gave many Marks of his great Lenity, often urging the Services you had done him, and endeavouring to extenuate your Crimes. The Treasurer and Admiral insisted that you should be put to the most painful and ignominious Death, by setting Fire on your House at Night, and the General was to attend with twenty thousand Men armed with poisoned Arrows to shoot you on the Face and Hands. Some of your Servants were to have private Orders to strew a poisonous Juice on your Shirts which would soon make you tear your own Flesh, and die in the utmost Torture. The General came into same Opinion; so that for a long time there was a Majority against you. But his Majesty resolving, if possible to spare your Life, at last brought off the Chamberlain.

Upon

Upon this Incident, *Reldresal*, Principal Secretary for private Affairs, who always approved himself your true Friend, was commanded by the Emperor to deliver in his Opinion, which he accordingly did: And therein justify the good Thoughts you have of him. He allowed your Crimes to be great; but that still there was room for Mercy, the most commendable Virtue in a Prince, and for which his Majesty was so justly celebrated. He said, the Friendship between you and him was so well known to the World, that perhaps the most honourable Board might think him partial: However, in Obedience to the Command he had received, he would freely offer his Sentiments, that if his Majesty, in Consideration of your Services, and pursuant to his own merciful Disposition, would please to spare your Life, and only give Order to put out both your Eyes, he humbly conceived, that by this Expedient, Justice might in some Measure be satisfied, and all the World would applaud the Lenity of the Emperor as well as the fair and generous Proceedings of those who have the Honour to be his Counsellors. That the Loss of your Eyes would be no Impediment to your bodily Strength, by which you might still be useful to his Majesty. That Blindness is an Addition to Courage, by concealing Dangers from us; that the Fear you had for your Eyes, was the greatest Difficulty in bringing over the Enemy's Fleet, and it would be sufficient for you to see by the Eyes of the Ministers, since the greatest Princes do no more.

This Proposal was received with the utmost Disapprobation by the whole Board. *Bolgolam*, the Admiral, could not preserve his Temper; but rising up in Fury, said, he wondered how the Secretary durst presume to give his Opinion for preserving the Life of a Traitor: That the Services you had performed were, by all true Reasons of State, the great Aggravation of your Crimes; that you, who were able to extinguish the Fire, by discharge of Urine in her Majesty's Apartment (which he mentioned with Horror) might, at another time, raise an Inundation by the same Means to drown the whole Palace; and the same Strength, which enabled you to bring over the Enemy's Fleet, might serve, upon the first Discontent, to carry it back: That he had good Reasons to think you were a *Big-Endian* in your Heart; and as Treason begins in the Heart, before it appears in Overt-acts, so he

accused

accuſed you as a Traytor on that Account, and therefore inſiſted you ſhould be put to Death.

The Treaſurer was of the ſame Opinion; he ſhewed to what Streights his Majeſty's Revenue was reduced by the Charge of maintaining you, which would ſoon grow inſupportable: That the Secretary's Expedient of putting out your Eyes was ſo far from being a Remedy againſt this Evil, it would probably encreaſe it, as it is manifeſt from the blinding ſome Kind of Fowl, after which they fed the faſter, and grew ſooner fat: That his ſacred Majeſty, and the Council, who were his Judges, were in their own Conſciences fully convinced of your Guilt, which was a ſufficient Argument to condemn you to Death, without the formal Proofs required by the ſtrict Letter of the Law.

But his Imperial Majeſty fully determined againſt capital Puniſhment, was graciouſly pleaſed to ſay, That ſince the Council thought the Loſs of your Eyes too eaſy a Cenſure, ſome other may be inflicted hereafter. And your Friend the Secretary, humbly deſiring to be heard again, in anſwer to what the Treaſurer had objected concerning the great Charge his Majeſty was at in maintaining you, ſaid, that his Excellency, who had the ſole Diſpoſal of the Emperor's Revenue, might eaſily provide againſt that Evil, by gradually leſſening your Eſtabliſhment; by which, for Want of ſufficient Food, you would grow weak and faint, and loſe your Appetite, and conſequently decay and conſume in a few Months; neither would the Stench of your Carcaſs be then ſo dangerous, when it ſhould become more than half diminiſhed; and immediately, upon your Death, five or ſix thouſand of his Majeſty's Subjects might in two or three Days, cut your Fleſh from your Bones, take it away by Cart-Loads, and bury it in diſtant Parts to prevent Infection, leaving the Skeleton, as a Monument of Admiration to Poſterity.

Thus by the great Friendſhip of the Secretary, the whole Affair was compromiſed. It was ſtrictly enjoined, that the Project of ſtarving you by Degrees, ſhould be kept a Secret, but the Sentence of putting out your Eyes, was entered on the Books; none diſſenting except *Bolgolam*, the Admiral, who, being a Creature of the Empreſs, was perpetually inſtigated by her Majeſty to inſiſt upon your Death, ſhe having born perpetual

Malice against you, on account of that infamous and illegal Method you took to extinguish the Fire in her Apartment.

In three Days, your Friend, the Secretary, will be directed to come to your House, and read before you the Articles of Impeachment; and then to signify the great Lenity and Favour of his Majesty and Council, whereby you are only condemned to the Loss of your Eyes, which his Majesty doth not question you will gratefully and humbly submit to; and twenty of his Majesty's Surgeons will attend, in order to see the Operation well performed, by discharging very sharp-pointed Arrows into the Balls of your Eyes, as you lie on the Ground.

I leave to your Prudence what Measures you will take; and to avoid Suspicion, I must immediately return in as private Manner as I came.

His Lordship did so, and I remained alone, under many Doubts and Perplexities of Mind.

It was a Custom introduced by this Prince and his Ministry, (very different, as I have been assured, from the Practices of former times) that after the Court had decreed any cruel Execution, either to gratify the Monarch's Resentment, or the Malice of a Favourite, the Emperor made a Speech to his whole Council, expressing his great Lenity and Tenderness, as Qualities known and confessed by all the World. This Speech was immediately published through the Kingdom; nor did any thing terrify the People so much as those Encomiums on this Majesty's Mercy; because it was observed, that the more these Praises were inlarged and insisted on, the more inhuman was the Punishment, and the Sufferer more innocent. And as to myself, I must confess, having never been designed for a Courtier, either by my Birth or Education, I was so ill a Judge of Things that I could not discover the Lenity and Favour of this Sentence, but conceived it (perhaps erroneously) rather to be rigorous than gentle. I sometimes thought of standing my Tryal; for, although I could not deny the Facts alledged in the several Articles, yet I hoped they would admit of some Extenuation. But having in my Life perused many State-Trials, which I ever observed to terminate as the Judges thought fit to direct, I durst not rely on so danger-

ous

ous a Decision, in so critical a Juncture, and against such powerful Enemies. Once I was strongly bent upon Resistance, for while I had Liberty, the whole Strength of that Empire could hardly subdue me, and I might easily with Stones pelt the Metropolis to Pieces; but I soon rejected that Project with Horror, by remembering the Oath I had made to the Emperor, the Favours I received from him, and the high Title of *Nardac* he conferred upon me. Neither had I so soon learned the Gratitude of Courtiers, to persuade myself that his Majesty's present Severities acquitted me of all past Obligations.

At last I fixed upon a Resolution, for which it is probable I may incur some Censure, and not unjustly; for I confess I owe the preserving mine Eyes, and consequently my Liberty, to my own great Rashness and want of Experience: Because if I had then known the Nature of Princes, and Ministers, which I have since observed in many other Courts, and their Methods of treating Criminals less obnoxious than myself, I should with great Alacrity and Readiness have submitted to so easy a Punishment. But hurry'd on by the Precipitancy of Youth, and having his Imperial Majesty's Licence to pay my Attendance upon the Emperor of *Blefuscu*, I took this Opportunity, before the three Days were elapsed, to send a Letter to my Friend the Secretary, signifying my Resolution of setting out that Morning for *Blefuscu*, pursuant to the Leave I had got; and without waiting for an Answer, I went to that Side of the Island where our Fleet lay. I seized a large Man of War, tied a Cable to the Prow, and lifting up the Anchors, I stript myself, put my Cloaths (together with my Coverlet, which I brought under my Arm) into the Vessel, and drawing it after me, between wading and swimming, arrived at the Royal Port of *Blefuscu*, where the People had long expected me; they lent me two Guides to direct me to the Capital City, which is of the same Name. I held them in my Hands 'till I came within two hundred Yards of the Gate, and desired them to signify my Arrival to one of the Secretaries, and let him know, I there waited his Majesty's Command. I had an Answer in about an Hour, that his Majesty, attended by the Royal Family, and great Officers of the Court, was coming out to receive me. I advanced a hundred Yards. The Emperor and his Train, alighted from their Horses, the Empress and Ladies from their Coaches, and I did not perceive they were

in

in any Fright or Concern. I lay on the Ground to kiss his Majesty's and the Empress's Hand. I told his Majesty that I was come according to my Promise, and with the Licence of the Emperor my Master, to have the Honour of seeing so mighty a Monarch, and to offer him any Service in my Power, consistent with my Duty to my own Prince; not mentioning a Word of my Disgrace, because I had hitherto no regular Information of it, and might suppose myself wholly ignorant of any such Design; neither could I reasonably conceive that the Emperor would discover the Secret while I was out of his Power: Wherein, however, it soon appeared I was deceived.

I shall not trouble the Reader with the particular Account of my Reception at this Court, which was suitable to the Generosity of so great a Prince; nor of the Difficulties I was in for want of a House and Bed, being forced to lie on the Ground, wrapt up in my Coverlet.

CHAP. VIII.

The Author, by a lucky Accident, finds Means to leave Blefuscu; *and, after some Difficulties, returns safe to* England, *his native Country.*

THREE Days after my Arrival, walking out of Curiosity to the North-East Coast of the Island, I observed, about half a League off in the Sea, somewhat that looked like a Boat overturned. I pulled off my Shoes and Stockings, and wading two or three hundred Yards, I found the Object to approach nearer by Force of the Tide; and then plainly saw it to be a real Boat, which I supposed might, by some Tempest, have been driven from a Ship: Whereupon I returned immediately towards the City, and desired his Imperial Majesty to lend me twenty of the tallest Vessels he had left after the loss of his Fleet, and three thousand Seamen under the Command of the Vice Admiral. This Fleet sailed round, while I went back the shortest Way to the Coast, where I first discovered the Boat; I found the Tide had driven it still nearer. The

Seamen

Seamen were all provided with Cordage, which I had before hand twiſted to a ſufficient Strength. When the Ships came up, I ſtript myſelf, and waded 'till I came within an hundred Yards of the Boat, after which I was forced to ſwim 'till I got up to it. The Seamen threw me the End of the Cord, which I faſtened to a Hole in the fore-part of the Boat, and the other End to a Man of War: But I found all my Labour to little Purpoſe, for being out of my Depth, I was not able to Work. In this Neceſſity I was forced to ſwim behind, and puſh the Boat forwards as often as I could, with one of my Hands: And the Tide favouring me, I advanced ſo far, that I could juſt hold up my Chin and feel the Ground, I reſted two or three Minutes, and then gave the Boat another Shove, and ſo on 'till the Sea was no higher than my Armpits; and now the moſt laborious Part being over, I took out my other Cables, which were ſtowed in one of the Ships, and faſtened them firſt to the Boat, and then to nine of the Veſſels which attended me; the Wind being favourable the Seamen towed, and I ſhoved 'till we arrived within forty Yards of the Shore, and waiting 'till the Tide was out, I got dry to the Boat, and by the Aſſiſtance of two thouſand Men, with Ropes and Engines, I made a Shift to turn it on its Bottom, and found it was but little damaged.

I ſhall not trouble the Reader with the Difficulties I was under by the Help of certain Paddles, which coſt me ten Days making, to get my Boat to the Royal Port of *Bleſuſcu*, where a mighty Concourſe of People appeared upon my Arrival, full of Wonder at the Sight of ſo prodigious a Veſſel. I told the Emperor that my good Fortune had thrown this Boat in my Way, to carry me to ſome Place from whence I might return into my native Country, and begged his Majeſty's Orders for getting Materials to fit it up, together with his Licence to depart, which, after ſome kind Expoſtulations, he was pleaſed to grant.

I did very much wonder, in all this time, not to have heard of any Expreſs relating to me, from our Emperor to the Court of *Bleſuſcu*. But I was afterwards given privately to underſtand, that his Imperial Majeſty, never imagining I had the leaſt notice of his Deſigns, believed I was only gone to *Bleſuſcu* in performance of my Promiſe, according to the Licence he had given me, which was well known

at our Court, and would return in a few Days when the Ceremony was ended. But he was at last in Pain at my long Absence; and, after consulting with the Treasurer, and the rest of that Cabal, a Person of Quality was dispatched with the Copy of the Articles against me. This Envoy had Instructions to represent to the Monarch of *Blefuscu* the great Lenity of his Master, who was content to punish me no farther than with the Loss of mine Eyes; that I had fled from Justice, and if I did not return in two Hours, I should be deprived of my Title of *Nardac*, and declar'd a Traitor. The Envoy further added, that in order to maintain the Peace and Amity between both Empires, his Master expected, that his Brother of *Blefuscu* would give Orders to have me sent back to *Lilliput*, bound Hand and Foot, to be punished as a Traitor.

The Emperor of *Blefuscu* having taken three Days to consult, returned an Answer consisting of many Civilities and Excuses. He said, that as for sending me bound, his Brother knew it was impossible; that although I had deprived him of his Fleet, yet he owed great Obligations to me for many good Offices I had done him in making Peace. That, however, both their Majesties would soon be made easy; for I had found a prodigious Vessel on the Shore able to carry me on the Sea, which he had given Order to fit up with my own Assistance and Direction; and he hoped in a few Weeks both Empires would be freed from so insupportable an Incumbrance.

With this Answer the Envoy return'd to *Lilliput*, and the Monarch of *Blefuscu* related to me all that had past; offering me at the same time (but under the strictest Confidence) his gracious Protection, if I would continue in his Service, wherein although I believed him sincere, yet I resolved never more to put any Confidence in Princes or Ministers, where I could possibly avoid it; and therefore, with all due Acknowledgments for his favourable Intentions, I humbly begged to be excused. I told him that since Fortune, whether good or evil, had thrown a Vessel in my Way, I was resolved to venture myself in the Ocean, rather than be an Occasion of Difference between two such mighty Monarchs. Neither did I find the Emperor at all displeased; and I discovered, by a certain Accident, that he was very glad of my Resolution, and so were most of his Ministers.

These

These Considerations moved me to hasten my Departure somewhat sooner than I intended; to which the Court, impatient to have me gone, very readily contributed. Five hundred Workmen were employed to make two Sails to my Boat, according to my Directions, by quilting thirteen fold of their strongest Linnen together. I was at the Pains of making Ropes and Cables, by twisting ten, twenty, or thirty of the thickest and strongest of theirs. A great Stone that I happen'd to find, after a long Search by the Sea-Shore, served me for an Anchor. I had the Tallow of three hundred Cows for greasing my Boat, and other Uses. I was at incredible Pains in cutting down some of the largest Timber-Trees for Oars and Masts, wherein I was, however, much assisted by his Majesty's Ship-Carpenters, who helped me in smoothing them after I had done the rough Work.

In about a Month, when all was prepared I sent to receive his Majesty's Commands, and to take my Leave. The Emperor and Royal Family came out of the Palace; I lay down on my Face to kiss his Hand, which he very graciously gave me; so did the Empress, and young Princes of the Blood. His Majesty presented me with fifty Purses of two hundred *Sprugs* apiece, together with his Picture at full Length, which I put immediately into one of my Gloves, to keep it from being hurt. The Ceremonies at my Departure were too many to trouble the Reader with at this time.

I stored the Boat with the Carcasses of an hundred Oxen, and three hundred Sheep, with Bread and Drink proportionable, and as much Meat ready dressed as four hundred Cooks could provide. I took with me six Cows and two Bulls alive, with as many Ewes and Rams, intending to carry them into my own Country and propagate the Breed. And to feed them on Board, I had a good Bundle of Hay, and a Bag of Corn; I would gladly have taken a Dozen of the Natives, but this was a thing the Emperor would not permit; and besides a diligent Search into my Pockets, his Majesty engaged my Honour not to carry away any of his Subjects, although with their own Consent and Desire.

Having thus prepared all things as well as I was able, I set sail on the twenty-fourth Day of *September* 1701, at six in the Morning; and when I had gone about

bout four Leagues to the Northward, the Wind being at South-East, at six in the Evening, I described a small Island about half a League to the North-West. I advanced forward, and cast Anchor on the Lee-side of the Island, which seemed to be uninhabited. I then took some Refreshment, and went to my Rest. I slept well, and I conjecture at least six Hours, for I found the Day broke in two Hours after I awaked. It was a clear Night. I eat my Breakfast before the Sun was up; and heaving Anchor, the Wind being favourable, I steered the same Course, that I had done the Day before, wherein I was directed by my Pocket-compass. My Intention was to reach, if possible, one of those Islands, which I had reason to believe lay on the North-East of *Van Diemen*'s Land. I discovered nothing all that Day; but upon the next, about three in the Afternoon, when I had by my Computation made twenty four Leagues from *Blefuscu*, I descried a Sail steering to the South-East; my Course was due East. I hailed her, but could get no Answer; yet I found I gained upon her, for the Wind slackened. I made all the Sail I could, and in half an Hour she spied me, then hung out her Antient, and discharged a Gun. It is not easy to express the Joy I was in upon the unexpected Hope of once more seeing my beloved Country, and the dear Pledges I left in it. The Ship slackened her Sails, and I came up with her between five and six in the Evening, *September* 26; but my Heart leapt within me to see her *English* Colours. I put my Cows and Sheep into my Coat-Pockets, and got on Board with all my little Cargo of Provisions. The Vessel was an *English* Merchant-Man, returning from *Japan* by the North and South-Seas; the Captain, Mr. *John Biddel* of *Deptford*, a very civil Man, and an excellent Sailor. We were now in the Latitude of 30 Degrees South, there were about fifty Men in the Ship; and here I met an old Comrade of mine, one *Peter Williams*, who gave me a good Character to the Captain. This Gentleman treated me with Kindness, and desired I would let him know what Place I came from last and whither I was bound; which I did in a few Words, but he thought I was raving, and that the Dangers I underwent had disturbed my Head; whereupon I took my Black Cattle and Sheep out of my Pocket, which, after great Astonishment, clearly convinced him of my Veracity. I then shewed him the Gold given me by the Emperor of *Lilliput*, together with his Majesty's Picture

ſure at full Length, and ſome other Rarities of that Country. I gave him two Purſes of two hundred *Sprugs* each, and promiſed, when we arriyed in *England*, to make him a Preſent of a Cow and a Sheep big with Young.

I ſhall not trouble the Reader with a particular Account of this Voyage, which was very proſperous for the moſt Part. We arrived in the *Downs* on the 13*th* of *April* 1702. I had only one Misfortune, that the Rats on Board carried away one of my Sheep; I found her Bones in a Hole, picked clean from the Fleſh. The reſt of my Cattle I got ſafe aſhore, and ſet them a grazing in a Bowling-Green at *Greenwich*, where the fineneſs of the Graſs made them feed very heartily, though I had always feared the contrary: Neither could I poſſibly have preſerved them in ſo long a Voyage if the Captain had not allowed me ſome of his beſt Biſket, which rubbed to Powder, and mingled with Water, was their conſtant Food. The ſhort time I continued in *England*, I made a conſiderable Profit in ſhewing my Cattle to many Perſons of Quality, and others: And before I began my ſecond Voyage, I ſold them for ſix hundred Pounds. Since my laſt Return, I find the Breed is conſiderably increaſed, eſpecially the Sheep which I hope will prove much to the Advantage of the Woollen Manufacture, by the Fineneſs of the Fleeces.

I ſtayed about two Months with my Wife and Family; for my inſatiable Deſire of ſeeing foreign Countries would ſuffer me to continue no longer. I left fifteen hundred Pounds with my Wife, and fixed her in a good Houſe at *Redriff*. My remaining Stock I carried with me, part in Money, and part in Goods, in Hopes to improve my Fortunes. My eldeſt Uncle *John* had left me an Eſtate in Land, near *Epping*, of about thirty Pounds a Year; and I had a long Leaſe of the *Black-Bull* in *Fetter-Lane*, which yielded me as much more: So that I was not in any Danger of leaving my Family upon the Pariſh. My Son *Johnny*, named ſo after his Uncle, was at the Grammar School, and a towardly Child. My Daughter *Betty* (who is now well married, and has got Children) was then at her Needle-Work. I took leave of my Wife, and Boy and Girl, with Tears on both

Sides, and went on Board the *Adventure*, a Merchant Ship, of three hundred Tons, bound for *Surat*, Captain *John Nicholas* of *Liverpool* Commander. But my Account of this Voyage must be referred to the Second Part of my Travels.

The End of the first Part.

TRAVELS.

PART II.

A Voyage to BROBDINGNAG.

CHAP. I.

A great Storm described, the Long-Boat sent to fetch Water, the Author goes with it to discover the Country. He is left on Shore, is seized by one of the Natives, and carried to a Farmer's House. His Reception there, with several Accidents that happened there. A Description of the Inhabitants.

HAVING been condemned by Nature and Fortune to an active and restless Life, in two Months after my Return, I again left my native Country, and took Shipping in the *Downs* on the 20*th* Day of *June* 1702, in the *Adventure*, Capt. *John Nicholas* a *Cornish* Man, Commander, bound for *Surat*. We had a very prosperous Gale 'till we arrived at the *Cape of Good Hope*, where we landed for fresh Water, but discovering a

Leak

Leak we unſhipped our Goods, and winter'd there; for the Captain falling ſick of an Ague, we could not leave the *Cape* 'till the End of *March*. We then ſet ſail, and had a good Voyage 'till we paſſed the *Streights* of *Madagaſcar*; but having got Northward of that Iſland, and to about five Degrees South Latitude, the Winds, which in thoſe Seas are obſerved to blow a conſtant equal Gale between the North and Weſt, from the beginning of *December* to the beginning of *May*, on the 9*th* of *April* began to blow with much greater Violence, and more Weſterly than uſual, continuing ſo for twenty Days together, during which time we were driven a little to the Eaſt of the *Molucca* Iſlands, and about three Degrees Northward of the Line, as our Captain found by an Obſervation he took the 2*d* of *May*, at which time the Wind ceaſed, and it was a perfect Calm, whereat I was not a little rejoyced. But he being a Man well experienc'd in the Navigation of thoſe Seas, bid us all prepare againſt a Storm, which accordingly happened the Day following: For a Southern Wind, called the Southern *Monſoon*, began to ſet in.

Finding it was like to over-blow, we took in our Sprit-Sail, and ſtood by to hand the Fore-Sail; but making foul Weather we looked the Guns were all faſt, and handed the Mizzen. The Ship lay very broad off, ſo we thought it better ſpooning before the Sea, than trying or hulling. We reeſt the Fore-Sail and ſet him, we hawl'd aft the Fore-Sheet; the Helm was hard a Weather. The Ship wore bravely. We belay'd the Fore-down-hall; but the Sail was ſplit, and we hawl'd down the Yard, and got the Sail into the Ship, and unbound all the Things clear of it. It was a very fierce Storm; the Sea broke ſtrange and dangerous. We hawl'd off upon the Lanniard of the Whipſtaff, and helped the Man at Helm. Would not get down our Top-Maſt, but let all ſtand, becauſe ſhe ſcudded before the Sea very well, and we knew that the Top-Maſt being aloft, the Ship was wholſomer, and made better way thoro' the Sea, ſeeing we had Sea-room. When the Storm was over, we ſet Fore-Sail and Main-Sail, and brought the Ship to. Then we ſet the Mizzen, Main-Top-Sail and the Fore-Top-Sail. Our Courſe was Eaſt North-Eaſt, the Wind was at South-Weſt. We got the Star-Board Tacks aboard, we caſt off our Weather Braces and Liſts; we ſet in the Lee-Braces, and hawl'd forward by the Weather-

Weather-Bowlings, and hawl'd them right, and belay'd them, and hawl'd over the Mizzen Tack to Windward, and kept her full and by as near as she could lie.

During this Storm which was followed by a strong Wind West South-West, we were carryed by my Computation, about five hundred Leagues to the East, so that the oldest Sailor aboard could not tell in what Part of the World we were. Our Provisions held out well, our Ship was staunch, and our Crew all in good Health; but we lay in the utmost Distress for Water. We though tit best to hold on the same Course, rather than turn more Northerly, which might have brought us to the North-West Parts of Great *Tartary*, and into the frozen Sea.

On the 16*th* Day of *June* 1703, a Boy on the Top-mast discovered Land. On the 17*th* we came in full View of a great Island or Continent (for we knew not whether) on the Southside whereof was a small Neck of Land jutting out into the Sea, and a Creek too shallow to hold a Ship of above one hundred Tuns. We cast anchor within a League of this Creek, and our Captain sent a dozen of his Men well armed in the Long-Boat, with Vessels for Water, if any could be found. I desired his Leave to go with them, that I might see the Country, and make what Discoveries I could. When we came to Land we saw no River or Spring, nor any sign of Inhabitants. Our Men therefore wander'd on the Shore to find out some fresh Water near the Sea, and I walked alone about a Mile on the other Side, where I observed the Country all barren and rocky, I now began to be weary, and seeing nothing to entertain my Curiosity, I returned gently down towards the Creek; and the Sea being full in my View, I saw our Men already got into the Boat, and rowing for Life to the Ship. I was going to halloo after them, altho' it had been to little Purpose, when I observed a huge Creature walking after them in the Sea, as fast as he could: He waded not much deeper than his Knees, and took prodigious Strides: But our Men had the Start of him half a League, and the Sea thereabouts being full of sharp pointed Rocks, the Monster was not able to overtake the Boat. This I was afterwards told, for I durst not stay to see the Issue of the Adventure; but ran as fast as I could the Way I first went, and then climbed

up a ſteep Hill, which gave me ſome Proſpect of the Country. I found it fully cultivated; but that which firſt ſurprized me was the Length of the Graſs, which in thoſe Grounds that ſeemed to be kept for Hay, was above twenty Foot high.

I fell into a high Road, for ſo I took it to be, though it ſerved to the Inhabitants only as a Foot-Path through a Field of Barly. Here I walked on for ſome time, but could ſee little on either Side, it being now near Harveſt, and the Corn riſing near forty Foot. I was an Hour walking to the End of this Field, which was fenced in with a Hedge of at leaſt one hundred and twenty Foot high, and the Trees ſo lofty that I could make no Computation of their Altitude. There was a Stile to paſs from this Field into the next. It had four Steps, and a Stone to croſs over when you came to the uppermoſt. It was impoſſible for me to climb this Stile, becauſe every Step was ſix Foot high, and the upper Stone above twenty. I was endeavouring to find ſome Gap in the Hedge, when I diſcover'd one of the Inhabitants in the next Field, advancing towards the Stile, of the ſame Size with him I ſaw in the Sea, purſuing our Boat. He appear'd as tall as an ordinary Spire-Steeple, and took about ten Yards at every Stride, as near as I could gueſs. I was ſtruck with the utmoſt Fear and Aſtoniſhment, and ran to hide myſelf in the Corn from whence I ſaw him at the Top of the Stile, looking back into the next Field on the Right Hand, and heard him call in a Voice many Degrees louder than a Speaking-Trumpet; but the Noiſe was ſo high in the Air, that firſt I certainly thought it was Thunder. Whereupon ſeven Monſters, like himſelf, came towards him with Reaping-Hooks in their Hands, each Hook about the Largeneſs of ſix Scythes. Theſe People were not ſo well clad as the firſt, whoſe Servants or Labourers they ſeemed to be: For upon thoſe Words he ſpoke, they went to reap the Corn in the Field where I lay. I kept from them at as great a Diſtance as I could, but was forced to move with extreme Difficulty, for the Stalks of the Corn were ſometimes not above a Foot diſtant, ſo that I could hardly ſqueeze my Body betwixt them. I made ſhift to go forward 'till I came to a Part of the Field where the Corn had been lain by the Rain and Wind. Here it was impoſſible for me to advance a Step; for the

Stalks

Stalks were so interwoven that I could not creep thorough, and the Beards of the fallen Ears so strong and pointed that they pierced through my Cloaths into my Flesh. At the same time I heard the Reapers not above an hundred Yards behind me. Being quite dispirited with Toil, and wholly overcome by Grief and Despair, I lay down between two Ridges, and heartily wished I might there end my Days. I bemoaned my desolate Widow, and fatherless Children. I lamented my own Folly and Wilfulness in attempting a second Voyage against the Advice of all my Friends and Relations. In this terrible Agitation of Mind I could not forbear thinking of *Lilliput*, whose Inhabitants looked upon me as the greatest Prodigy that ever appeared in the World: Where I was able to draw an Imperial Fleet in my Hand, and perform those other Actions which will be recorded for ever in the Chronicles of that Empire, while Posterity shall hardly believe them, although attested by Millions. I reflected what a Mortification it must prove to me to appear as inconsiderable in this Nation as one single *Lilliputian* would be among us. But this I conceiv'd was to be the least of my Misfortunes: For as human Creatures are observed to be more savage and cruel in Proportion to their Bulk, what could I expect but to be a Morsel in the Mouth of the first among these enormous Barbarians that should happen to seize me? Undoubtedly Philosophers are in the right when they tell us, that nothing is great or little otherwise than by Comparison. It might have pleased Fortune to let the *Lilliputians* find some Nation, where the People were as diminutive with Respect to them, as they were to me. And who knows but that even this prodigious Race of Mortals might be equally over-matched in some distant part of the World, whereof we have yet no Discovery?

Scared and confounded as I was, I could not forbear going on with these Reflections, when one of the Reapers approaching within ten Yards of the Ridge where I lay, made me apprehend that with the next Step I should be squashed to Death, under his Foot, or cut in two with his Reaping-Hook. And therefore when he was again about to move, I screamed as loud as Fear could make me. Whereupon the huge Creature trod short, and looking round about under him for some time, at last espied me as I lay on the Ground. He considered a

while

while with the Caution of one who endeavours to lay hold on a ſmall dangerous Animal in ſuch a Manner that it may not be able either to ſcratch or bite him, as I myſelf have done with a Weaſel in *England*. At length he ventured to take me up behind by the Middle between his Fore-finger and Thumb, and brought me within three Yards of his Eyes, that he might behold my Shape more perfectly. I gueſſed his Meaning, and my good Fortune gave me ſo much Preſence of Mind, that I reſolved not to ſtruggle in the leaſt as he held me in the Air, about ſixty Foot from the Ground, although he grievouſly pinched my Sides, for fear I ſhould ſlip through his Fingers. All I ventured was to raiſe mine Eyes towards the Sun, and place my Hands together in a ſupplicating Poſture, and to ſpeak ſome Words in an humble melancholy Tone, ſuitable to the Condition I then was in. For I apprehended every Moment that he would daſh me againſt the Ground, as we uſually do any little hateful Animal which we have a mind to deſtroy. But my good Star would have it, that he appeared pleaſed with my Voice and Geſtures, and began to look upon me as a Curioſity, much wondering to hear me pronounce articulate Words, although he could not underſtand them. In the mean time I was not able to forbear groaning and ſhedding Tears, and turning my Head towards my Sides, letting him know, as well as I could, how cruelly I was hurt by the Preſſure of his Thumb and Finger. He ſeemed to apprehend my Meaning; for, lifting up the Lappet of his Coat, he put me gently into it, and immediately ran along with me to his Maſter, who was a ſubſtantial Farmer, and the ſame Perſon I had firſt ſeen in the Field.

The Farmer having (as I ſuppoſe by their Talk) received ſuch an Account of me as his Servant could give him, took a Piece of ſmall Straw, about the Size of a walking Staff, and therewith lifted up the Lappets of my Coat; which it ſeems he thought to be ſome kind of Covering that Nature had given me. He blew my Hairs aſide to take a better View of my Face. He called his Hinds about him, and aſked them (as I afterwards learned) whether they had ever ſeen in the Field any little Creature that reſembled me: He then placed me ſoftly on the Ground upon all four, but I got immediately up, and walked ſlowly backwards and forwards, to let thoſe People ſee I had no Intent to

run

run away. They all ſat down in a Circle about me, the better to obſeve my Motions. I pulled off my Hat, and made a low Bow towards the Farmer. I fell on my Knees and liſted up my Hands and Eyes, and ſpoke ſeveral Words as loud as I could: I took a Purſe of Gold out of my Pocket, and humbly preſented it to him. He receiv'd it on the Palm of his Hand, then applied it cloſe to his Eye, to ſee what it was, and afterwards turned it ſeveral times with the Point of a Pin, (which he took out of his Sleeve) but could make nothing of it. Whereupon I made a Sign that he ſhould place his Hand on the Ground. I took the Purſe and opening it, poured all the Gold into his Palm. There were ſix *Spaniſh* Pieces, of four Piſtoles each, beſides twenty or thirty ſmaller Coins. I ſaw him wet the Tip of his Little-finger upon his Tongue, and take up one of my largeſt Pieces, and then another, but he ſeemed to be wholly ignorant what they were. He made me a Sign to put them again into my Purſe, and the Purſe again into my Pocket, which after offering to him ſeveral times I thought it beſt to do.

The Farmer was by this time convinced I muſt be a rational Creature. He ſpoke often to me, but the Sound of his Voice pierced my Ears like that of a Water-Mill, yet his Words were articulate enough. I anſwer'd as loud as I could, in ſeveral Languages, and he often laid his Ear within two Yards of me; but all in vain, for we were wholly unintelligible to each other. He then ſent his Servants to their Work, and taking his Handkerchief out of his Pocket he doubled and ſpread it on his Left-Hand, which he plac'd flat on the Ground, with the Palm upwards, making me a Sign to ſtep into it, as I could eaſily do, for it was not above a Foot in Thickneſs. I thought it my Part to obey, and for fear of falling, laid myſelf at Length upon the Handkerchief, with the Remainder of which he lapped me up to the Head for farther Security, and in this Manner carried me home to his Houſe. There he called his Wife, and ſhewed me to her; but ſhe ſcreamed and ran back, as Women in *England* do at the Sight of a Toad or a Spider. However, when ſhe had a while ſeen my Behaviour, and how well I obſerved the Signs her Huſband made, ſhe was ſoon reconciled, and by Degrees grew extremely tender of me.

It was about twelve at Noon, and a

Servant brought in Dinner. It was only one ſubſtantial Diſh of Meat (fit for the plain Condition of an Huſband-man) in a Diſh of about four and twenty foot Diameter. The Company were the Farmer and his Wife, three Children and an old Grand-mother: When they were ſat down, the Farmer placed me at ſome Diſtance from him on the Table, which was thirty Foot high from the Floor. I was in a terrible Fright, and kept as far as I could from the Edge for fear of falling. The Wife minced a Bit of Meat, then crumbled ſome Bread on a Trencher, and placed it before me. I made her a low Bow, took out my Knife and Fork, and fell to eat, which gave them exceeding Delight. The Miſtreſs ſent her Maid for a ſmall Dram-Cup which held about three Gallons, and filled it with Drink, I took up the Veſſel with much Difficulty in both Hands, and in a moſt reſpectful Manner drank to her Ladyſhip's Health, expreſſing the Words as loud as I could in *Engliſh*, which made the Company laugh ſo heartily, that I was almoſt deafned with the Noiſe. This Liquor taſted like a ſmall Cyder, and was not unpleaſant. Then the Maſter made me a Sign to come to his Trencher-Side; but as I walked on the Table, being in great Surprize all the Time, as the indulgent Reader will eaſily conceive and excuſe, I happen'd to ſtumble againſt a Cruſt, and fell flat on my Face, but receiv'd no Hurt. I got up immediately, and obſerving the good People to be in much Concern, I took my Hat (which I held under my Arm out of good Manners) and waving it over my Head, made three Huzza's, to ſhew I had got no Miſchief by my Fall. But advancing forwards toward my Maſter (as I ſhall henceforth call him) his youngeſt Son who ſat next him, an arch Boy, of about ten Years old, took me up by the Legs, and held me ſo high in the Air, that I trembled every Limb; but his Father ſnatched me from him, and at the ſame Time gave him ſuch a Box on the Left Ear, as would have felled an *European* Troop of Horſe to the Earth, ordering him to be taken from the Table. But being afraid the Boy might owe me a Spight, and well remembring how miſchievous all Children among us naturally are to Sparrows, Rabbits, young Kittens, and Puppy Dogs, I fell on my Knees, and pointing to the Boy, made my Maſter to underſtand, as well as I could, that I deſired his Son might be pardoned. The Father complied, and the Lad took his

Seat

Seat again; whereupon I went to him and kiſſed his Hand, which my Maſter took and made him ſtroak me gently with it.

In the midſt of Dinner, my Miſtreſs's favourite Cat leapt into her Lap. I heard a Noiſe behind me like that of a Dozen Stocking-Weavers at Work; and turning my Head, I found that it proceeded from the purring of that Animal, who ſeemed to be three times larger than an Ox, as I computed by the View of her Head, and one of her Paws, while her Miſtreſs was feeding and ſtroaking her. The Fierceneſs of this Creature's Countenance altogether diſcompoſed me; though I ſtood at the further End of the Table, above fifty Foot off; and although my Miſtreſs held her faſt, for fear ſhe might give a Spring, and ſeize me in her Talons. But it happened there was no danger; for the Cat took not the leaſt Notice of me when my Maſter placed me within three Yards of her. And as I have been always told, and found true by experience in my Travels, that flying or diſcovering Fear before a fierce Animal, is a certain Way to make it purſue or attack you, ſo I reſolved in this dangerous Juncture to ſhew no manner of Concern. I walked with Intrepidity five or ſix times before the very Head of the Cat, and came within half a Yard of her; whereupon ſhe drew herſelf back, as if ſhe were more afraid of me: I had leſs Apprehenſion concerning the Dogs, whereof three or four came into the Room, as it is uſual in Farmers Houſes, one of which was a Maſtiff, equal in Bulk to four Elephants, and a Grey-hound ſomewhat taller than the Maſtiff, but not ſo large.

When Dinner was almoſt done, the Nurſe came in with a Child of a Year old in her Arms, who immediately ſpied me, and began a Spuall that you might have heard it from *London-Bridge* to *Chelſea*, after the uſual Oratory of Infants to get me for a Play-thing. The Mother out of pure Indulgence took me up, and put me towards the Child, who preſently ſeized me by the Middle, and got my Head into his Mouth, where I roared ſo loud that the Urchin was frighted, and let me drop, and I ſhould infallibly have broke my Neck if the Mother had not held her Apron under me. The Nurſe, to quiet her Babe, made Uſe of a Rattle, which was a kind of hollow Veſſel filled with great Stones, and faſtened by a Cable to the

the Child's Waiſt: But all in vain, ſo that ſhe was forced to apply the laſt Remedy by giving it ſuck. I muſt confeſs no Object ever diſguſted me ſo much as the Sight of her monſtrous Breaſt, which I cannot tell what to compare with, ſo as to give the curious Reader an Idea of its Bulk, Shape and Colour. It ſtood prominent ſix Foot, and could not be leſs than ſixteen in Circumference. The Nipple was about half the Bigneſs of my Head, and the Hue, both of that and the Dug, ſo varified with Spots, Pimples and Freckles, that nothing could appear more nauſeous: For I had a near Sight of her, ſhe ſitting down the more conveniently to ſuck, and I ſtanding on the Table. This made me reflect upon the fair Skins of our *Engliſh* Ladies who appear ſo beautiful to us, only becauſe they are of our own Size, and their Defects not to be ſeen but through a Magnifying-Glaſs, where we find, by Experiment, that the ſmoothеſt and whiteſt Skins look rough and coarſe, and ill-coloured.

I remember when I was at *Lilliput*, the Complexions of thoſe diminutive People appeared to me the faireſt in the World, and talking upon this Subject with a Perſon of Learning there, who was an intimate Friend of mine, he ſaid, my Face appeared much fairer and ſmoother when he looked on me from the Ground, than it did upon a nearer View when I took him up in my Hand and brought him cloſe, which he confeſſed was at firſt a very ſhocking Sight. He ſaid, he could diſcover great Holes in my Skin; that the Stumps of my Beard were ten times ſtronger than the Briſtles of a Boar, and my Complexion made up of ſeveral Colours altogether diſagreeable: Although I muſt beg Leave to ſay for myſelf, that I am as fair as moſt of my Sex and Country, and very little Sun-burnt by Travels. On the other ſide, diſcourſing of the Ladies in that Emperor's Court, he uſed to tell me, one had Freckles, another too wide a Mouth, a third too large a Noſe; nothing of which I was able to diſtinguiſh. I confeſs this Reflection was obvious enough; which however, I could not forbear, leſt the Reader might think thoſe vaſt Creatures were actually deformed: For I muſt do them Juſtice to ſay they are a comely Race of People; and particularly the Features of my Maſter's Countenance, although he were but a Farmer, when I beheld him from the Height of ſixty Foot, appeared very well proportioned.

When

When Dinner was done, my Master went out to his Labourers, and as I could discover by his Voice and Gesture, gave his Wife a strict Charge to take Care of me. I was very much tired and disposed to sleep, which my Mistress perceiving, she put me on her own Bed, and covered me with a clean white Handkerchief, but larger and coarser than the Main-Sail of a Man of War.

I slept about two Hours, and dreamed I was at Home with my Wife and Children, which aggravated my Sorrows when I awaked and found myself alone in a vast Room, between two and three hundred Foot wide, and about two hundred Foot high, lying in a Bed twenty Yards wide. My Mistress was gone about her Houshold Affairs, and had lock'd me in. The Bed was eight Yards from the Floor. Some natural Necessities requir'd me to get down; I durst not presume to call, and if I had, it would have been in vain, with such a Voice as mine, at so great a Distance as from the Room where I lay to the Kitchen where the Family kept. While I was under these Circumstances, two Rats crept up the Curtains, and ran smelling backwards and forwards on the Bed. One of them came up almost to my Face; whereupon I rose in a Fright, and drew out my Hanger to defend myself. These horrible Animals had the Boldness to attack me on both Sides, and one of them held his Fore-feet at my Collar; but I had the good Fortune to rip up his Belly before he could do me any Mischief. He fell down at my Feet, and the other seeing the Fate of his Comrade, made his Escape, but not without one good Wound on the Back, which I gave him as he fled, and made the Blood run trickling down from him. After this Exploit, I walked gently to and fro on the Bed to recover my Breath and Loss of Spirits. These Creatures were of the Size of a large Mastiff, but infinitely more nimble and fierce, so that if I had taken off my Belt before I went to sleep, I must have infallibly been torn to Pieces and devoured. I measured the Tail of the dead Rat, and found it to be two Yards long, wanting an Inch; but it went against my Stomach to drag the Carcass off the Bed, where it lay still bleeding; I observed it had yet some Life, but with a strong Slash cross the Neck I thoroughly dispatched it.

Soon after my Mistress came into the Room, who, seeing me all bloody, ran

and took me up in her Hand. I pointed to the dead Rat, ſmiling and making other Signs to ſhew I was not hurt, whereat ſhe was extremely rejoiced, calling the Maid to take up the dead Rat, with a pair of Tongs, and throw it out of the Window. Then ſhe ſet me on a Table, where I ſhewed her my Hanger all bloody, and wiping it on the Lappet of my Coat, returned it to the Scabbard. I was preſſed to do more than one Thing, which another could not do for me, and therefore endeavoured to make my Miſtreſs underſtand that I deſired to be ſet down on the Floor; which after ſhe had done, my Baſhfulneſs would not ſuffer me to expreſs myſelf farther than by pointing to the Door, and bowing ſeveral times. The good Woman with much Difficulty at laſt perceived what I wou'd be at, and taking me up again in her Hand, walked into the Garden, where ſhe ſet me down. I went on one Side about two hundred Yards, and beckoning to her not to look or to follow me, I hid myſelf between two Leaves of Sorrel, and there diſcharged the Neceſſities of Nature.

I hope the gentle Reader will excuſe me for dwelling on theſe and the like Particulars, which, however, inſignificant they might appear to grovelling vulgar Minds, yet will certainly help a Philoſopher to enlarge his Thoughts and Imagination, and to apply them to a Benefit of publick as well as private Life, which was my ſole Deſign in preſenting this and other Accounts of my Travels to the World; wherein I have been chiefly ſtudious of Truth, without affecting any Ornaments of Learning or of Style. But the whole Scene of this Voyage made ſo ſtrong an Impreſſion on my Mind, and is ſo deeply fixed on my Memory, that in committing it to Paper I did not omit one material Circumſtance: However, upon a ſtrict Review, I blotted out ſeveral Paſſages of leſs Moment which were in my firſt Copy, for fear of being cenſured as tedious and trifling, whereof Travellers are often, perhaps not without Juſtice, accuſed.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

A Description of the Farmer's Daughter. The Author carried to a Market Town, and then to the Metropolis. The Particulars of his Journey

MY Mistress had a Daughter of nine Years old, a Child of toward Parts for her Age, very dextrous at her Needle, and skilful in dressing her Baby. Her Mother and she contrived to fit up the Baby's Cradle for me against Night: The Cradle was put into a small Drawer of a Cabinet, and the Drawer placed upon a Hanging-Shelf, for fear of the Rats. This was my Bed all the Time I stayed with those People, though made more conveniently by Degrees, as I began to learn their Language, and make my Wants known. This young Girl was so handy, that after I had once or twice pulled off my Cloaths before her, she was able to dress and undress me, though I never gave her that trouble when she would let me do either myself. She made me seven Shirts, and some other Linnen, of as fine Cloth as could be got, which indeed was coarser than Sackcloth; and these she constantly washed for me with her own Hands. She was likewise my School-Mistress to teach me the Language: When I pointed to any thing, she told me the Name of it in her own Tongue, so that in a few Days I was able to call for whatever I had a Mind to. She was very good natured, and not above forty Foot high, being little for her Age. She gave me the Name of *Grildrig*, which the Family took up, and afterwards the whole Kingdom. The Word imports what the *Latins* call *Nannculus*, the *Italians Homunceletino*, and the *English Mannikin*. To her I chiefly owe my Preservation in that Country: We never parted while I was there, I called her my *Glumdalclitch*, or little Nurse: And should be guilty of great Ingratitude, if I omitted this honourable mention of her Care and Affection towards me, which I heartily wish it lay in my Power to requite as she deserves, instead of being the innocent but unhappy Instrument of her Disgrace, as I have too much Reason to fear.

It now began to be known and talked of in the Neighbourhood, that my Master had found

found a ſtrange Animal in the Field, about the Bigneſs of a *Splacknuck*, but exactly ſhaped in every Part like a human Creature; which is likewiſe imitatd in all its Actions; ſeemed to ſpeak in a little Language of its own, had already learned ſeveral Words of theirs, went erect upon two Legs, was tame and gentle, would come when it was called, do whatever it was bid, had the fineſt Limbs in the World, and a Complexion fairer than a Nobleman's Daughter of three Years old. Another Farmer who lived hard by, and was a particular Friend of my Maſter, came on a Viſit on purpoſe to enquire into the Truth of this Story. I was immediately produced, and placed upon a Table, where I walked as I was commanded, drew my Hanger, put it up again, made my Reverence to my Maſter's Gueſt, aſked him in his own Language how he did, and told him he was welcome, juſt as my little Nurſe had inſtructed me. This Man who was old and dim-ſighted, put on his Spectacles to behold me better, at which I could not forbear laughing very heartily, for his Eyes appeared like the Full-Moon ſhining into a Chamber at two Windows. Our People, who diſcovered the Cauſe of my Mirth, bore me Company in laughing, at which the old Fellow was Fool enough to be angry and out of Countenance. He had the Character of a great Miſer, and, to my Misfortune, he well deſerved it, by the curſed Advice he gave my Maſter, to ſhew me as a Sight upon a Market Day, in the next Town, which was half an Hour's Riding, about two and twenty Miles from our Houſe. I gueſſed there was ſome Miſchief contriving, when I obſerved my Maſter and his Friend whiſpering long together, ſometimes pointing at me; and my Fears made me fancy that I overheard and underſtood ſome of their Words. But, the next Morning *Glumdalclitch*, my little Nurſe, told me the whole Matter, which ſhe had cunningly picked out from her Mother. The poor Girl laid me on her Boſom, and fell a weeping with Shame and Grief. She apprehended ſome Miſchief would happen to me from rude vulgar Folks, who might squeeze me to Death, or break one of my Limbs by taking me in their Hands. She had alſo obſerved how modeſt I was in my Nature, how nicely I regarded my Honour, and what an Indignity I ſhould conceive it to be expoſed for Money as a publick Spectacle to the meaneſt of the People. She ſaid, her *Papa* and *Mamma* had promiſed

miſed that *Gildrig* ſhould be her's, but now ſhe found they meant to ſerve her as they did laſt Year, when they pretended to give her a Lamb, and yet as ſoon as it was fat, ſold it to a Butcher. For my own Part, I may truly affirm, that I was leſs concerned than my Nurſe. I had a ſtrong Hope, which never left me, that I ſhould one Day recover my Liberty; and as to the Ignominy of being carried about for a Monſter, I conſider'd myſelf to be a perfect Stranger in the Country, and that ſuch a Misfortune could never be charged upon me as a Reproach if ever I ſhould return to *England*, ſince the King of *Great Britain* himſelf, in my Condition, muſt have undergone the ſame Diſtreſs.

My Maſter, purſuant to the Advice of his Friend, carried me in a Box the next Market Day to the neighbouring Town, and took along with him his little Daughter, my Nurſe, upon a Pillion behind him. The Box was cloſe on every Side, with a little Door for me to go in and out, and a few Gimlet-Holes to let in Air. The Girl had been ſo careful to put the Quilt of her Baby's Bed into it, for me to lie down on. However, I was terribly ſhaken, and diſcompoſed in this Journey, though it were but of half an Hour. For the Horſe went about forty Foot at every Step, and trotted ſo high, that the Agitation was equal to the riſeing and falling of a Ship in a great Storm, but much more frequent: Our Journey was ſomewhat farther than from *London* to *St. Alban's*. My Maſter alighted at an Inn which he uſed to frequent; and after conſulting a while with the Inn-keeper, and making ſome neceſſary Preparations, he hired the *Grultrud*, or Crier, to give Notice through the Town, of a ſtrange Creature to be ſeen at the *Green-Eagle*, not ſo big as a *Splacnuck* (an Animal in that Country very finely ſhaped, about ſix Foot long) and in every Part of the Body reſembling an human Creature, could ſpeak ſeveral Words, and perform an hundred diverting Tricks.

I was placed upon a Table in the largeſt Room of the Inn, which might be near three hundred Foot ſquare. My little Nurſe ſtood on a low Stool cloſe to the Table, to take Care of me, and direct what I ſhould do. My Maſter, to avoid a Croud, would ſuffer only thirty People at a time to ſee me. I walked about on the Table as the Girl commanded: She aſked me Queſtions, as far as ſhe knew

my Understanding of the Language reached, and I answer'd them as loud as I could. I turned about several times to the Company, paid my humble Respects, said they were welcome, and used some other Speeches I had been taught. I took up a Thimble filled with Liquor, which *Glumdalclitch* had given me for a Cup, and drank their Healths. I drew out my Hanger, and flourished with it after the Manner of Fencers in *England*. My Nurse gave me part of a Straw, which I exercised as a Pike, having learned the Art in my Youth. I was shewn that Day to twelve Setts of Company, and as often forced to go over again the same Popperies, 'till I was half dead with Weariness and Vexation. For, those who had seen me made such wonderful Reports, that the People were ready to break down the Doors to come in. My Master, for his own Interest, would not suffer any one to touch me except my Nurse, and, to prevent Danger, Benches were set round the Table at such a Distance as to put me out of every body's Reach. However, an unlucky School-Boy aimed a Hazel-Nut directly at my Head, which very narrowly missed me; otherwise, it came with so much Violence that it would have infallibly knocked out my Brains, for it was almost as large as a small Pumpion: But I had the Satisfaction to see the young Rogue well beaten and turned out of the Room.

My Master gave publick Notice, that he would shew me the next Market-Day, and in the mean Time he prepared a more convenient Vehicle for me, which he had reason enough to do; for I was tired with my first Journey, and with entertaining Company for eight Hours together, that I could hardly stand upon my Legs, or speak a Word. It was at least three Days before I recovered my Strength; and that I might have no Rest at Home, all the Gentlemen from a hundred Miles round, hearing of my Fame, came to see me at my Master's own House. There could not be fewer than thirty Persons with their Wives and their Children (for the Country was very populous; and my Master demanded the rate of a full Room whenever he shewed me at home, although it were only to a single Family: So that for sometime I had but little Ease every Day of the Week (except *Wednesday*, which is their Sabbath) although I were not carried to the Town.

My

My Master, finding how profitable I was like to be, resolved to carry me to the most considerable Cities of the Kingdom. Having therefore provided himself with all things necessary for a long Journey, and settled his Affairs at Home, he took leave of his Wife, and upon the 17*th* of *August* 1703, about two Months after my Arrival, we set out for the Metropolis, situated near the Middle of that Empire, and about three thousand Miles distant from our House: My Master made his Daughter, *Glumdalclitch*, ride behind him. She carried me on her Lap in a Box tied about her Waist. The Girl had lined it on all Sides with the softest Cloth she could get, well quilted underneath, furnished it with her Baby's Bed, provided me with Linnen and other Necessaries and made every thing as conveniently as she could. We had no other Company but a Boy of the House, who rode after us with the Luggage.

My Master's Design was to shew me in all the Towns by the Way, and to step out of the Road for fifty or an hundred Miles, to any Village, or Person of Quality's House where he might expect Custom. We made easy Journies of not above seven or eightscore Miles a Day: For *Glumdalclitch*, on purpose to spare me, complained she was tired with the Trotting of the Horse. She often took me out of my Box at my own Desire, to give me Air, and shew me the Country, but always held me fast by a Leading-String. We passed over five six or Rivers many Degrees broader and deeper than the *Nile* or the *Ganges*; and there was hardly a Rivulet so small as the *Thames* at *London-Bridge*. We were ten Weeks in our Journey, and I was shewn in eighteen large Towns, besides many Villages and private Families.

On the 26*th* of *October* we arrived at the Metropolis, called, in their Language, *Lorbrulgrud*, or *Pride of the Universe*. My Master took a Lodging in the principal Street of the City, not far from the Royal Palace, and put out Bills in usual Form, containing an exact Description of my Person and Parts. He hired a large Room between three and four hundred Foot wide. He provided a Table sixty Foot in Diameter, upon which I was to act my Part, and Palisadoed it round three Foot from the Edge, and as many high, to prevent my falling over. I was shewn ten times a Day, to the

Wonder

Wonder and Satisfaction of all People. I could now ſpeak the Language tolerably well, and perfectly underſtood every Word that was ſpoken to me. Beſides, I had learned their Alphabet, and could make a ſhift to explain a Sentence here and there; for *Glumdalclitch* had been my Inſtructor while we were at home, and at leiſure Hours during our Journey. She carried a little Book in her Pocket, not much larger than a *Sanſons Atlas*; it was a common Treatiſe for the Uſe of young Girls, giving a ſhort Account of their Religion; out of this ſhe taught me my Letters, and interpreted the Words.

CHAP. III.

The Author ſent for to Court. The Queen buys him of his Maſter, the Farmer, and preſents him to the King. He diſputes with his Majeſty's great Scholars. An Apartment at Court provided for the Author. He is in high Favour with the Queen. He ſtands up for the Honour of his own Country. His Quarrels with the Queen's Dwarf.

THE frequent Labours I underwent every Day, made, in a few Weeks a very conſiderable Change in my Health: The more my Maſter got by me, the more inſatiable he grew. I had quite loſt my Stomach, and was almoſt reduced to a Skeleton. The Farmer obſerved it, and concluding I ſoon muſt die, reſolved to make as good Hand of me as he could. While he was thus reaſoning and reſolving with himſelf, a *Slardral*, or Gentleman Uſher, came from Court, commanding my Maſter to carry me immediately thither for the Diverſion of the Queen and her Ladies. Some of the latter had already been to ſee me, and reported ſtrange Things of my Beauty, Behaviour, and good Senſe. Her Majeſty, and thoſe who attended her, were beyond Meaſure delighted with my Demeanor, I fell on my Knees, and begged the Honour of kiſſing her imperial Foot; but this gracious Princeſs held out her Little-finger towards me (after I was ſet on a Table) which I embraced in both my Arms, and put the Tip of it,

with

with the utmoſt Reſpect, to my Lip. She made me ſome general Queſtions about my Country and my Travels, which I anſwer'd as diſtinctly, and in as few Words as I could. She aſked me whether I would be content to live at Court. I bowed down to the Board of the Table, and I humbly anſwer'd, that I was my Maſter's Slave, but if I were at my own Diſpoſal, I ſhould be proud to devote my Life to her Majeſty's Service. She then aſked my Maſter whether he were willing to ſell me at a good Price. He, who apprehended, I could not live a Month was ready enough to part with me, and demanded a thouſand Pieces of Gold, which were order'd him on the Spot, each Piece being about the Bigneſs of eight hundred Moidores; but, allowing for the Proportion of all things between that Country and *Europe*, and the high Price of Gold among them, was hardly ſo great a Sum as a thouſand Guineas would be in *England*. I then ſaid to the Queen, ſince I was now her Majeſty's moſt humble Creature and Vaſſal, I muſt beg the Favour that *Glumdalclitch*, who had always tended me with ſo much Care and Kindneſs, and underſtood to do it ſo well, might be admitted into her Service, and continue to be my Nurſe and Inſtructor. Her Majeſty agreed to my Petition, and eaſily got the Farmer's Conſent, who was glad enough to have his Daughter preferred at Court: And the poor Girl herſelf was not able to hide her Joy: My late Maſter withdrew, bidding me farewell, and ſaying, he had left me in a good Service; to which I replied not a Word, only makeing a ſlight Bow.

The Queen obſerved my Coldneſs, and when the Farmer was gone out of the Apartment, aſked me the Reaſon. I made bold to tell her Majeſty that I owed no other Obligation to my late Maſter, than his not daſhing out the Brains of a poor harmleſs Creature found by Chance in his Field: Which Obligation was amply recompenced by the Gain he had made in ſhewing me through half the Kingdom, and the Price he had ſold me for. That the Life I had ſince led, was laborious enough to kill an Animal of ten times my Strength. That my Health was much impaired by the continual Drudgery of entertaining the Rabble every Hour of the Day, and that if my Maſter had not thought my Life in Danger, her Majeſty would not have got ſo cheap a Bargain. But I was out of all Fear of being

being ill treated under the Protection of ſo great and good an Empreſs, the Ornament of Nature, the Darling of the World, the Delight of her Subjects, the Phœnix of the Creation; ſo, I hoped my late Maſter's Apprehenſions would appear to be groundleſs, for I already found my Spirits to revive by the Influence of her moſt auguſt Preſence.

This was the Sum of my Speech, delivered with great Improprieties and Heſitation; the latter Part was altogether framed in the Style peculiar to that People, whereof I learned ſome Phraſes from *Glumdalclitch*, while ſhe was carrying me to Court.

The Queen giving great Allowance for my Defectiveneſs in ſpeaking, was however ſurpriſed at ſo much Wit and good Senſe in ſo diminutive an Animal. She took me in her own Hands, ond carried me to the King, who was then retired to his Cabinet. His Majeſty, a Prince of much Gravity, and auſtere Countenance, not well obſerving my Shape at firſt View, aſked the Queen after a cold Manner, how long it was ſince ſhe grew fond of a *Splacnuck*; for ſuch it ſeems he took me to be, as I lay upon my Breaſt in her Majeſty's Right Hand. But this Princeſs, who hath an infinite deal of Wit and Humour, ſet me gently on my Feet upon the Scrutore, and commanded me to give his Majeſty an Account of myſelf, which I did in a very few Words; and *Glumdalclitch*, who attended at the Cabinet Door, and could not endure I ſhould be out of her Sight, being admitted, confirmed all that had paſſed from my Arrival at her Father's Houſe.

The King, although he be as learned a Perſon as any in his Dominions, had been educated in the Study of Philoſophy, and Mathematicks; yet when he obſerved my Shape exactly, and ſaw me walk erect, before I began to ſpeak, conceived I might be a Piece of Clock-work, (which is in that Country arrived to a very great Perfection) contrived by ſome ingenious Artiſt. But when he heard my Voice, and found what I delivered to be regular and rational, he could not conceal his Aſtoniſhment. He was by no Means ſatisfied with the Relation I gave him of the Manner I came into his Kingdom, but thought it a Story concerted between *Glumdalclitch* and her Father, who had taught me a ſet of Words to make me

ſell

ſell at a better Price. Upon this Imagination he put ſeveral Queſtions to me, and ſtill received rational Anſwers, no otherwiſe defective than by a foreign Accent, and an imperfect Knowledge in the Language, with ſome ruſtick Phraſes which I had learned at the Farmer's Houſe, and did not ſuit the Polite Stile of a Court.

His Majeſty ſent for three great Scholars who were then in their weekly waiting, according to the Cuſtom in that Country. Theſe Gentlemen, after they had a while examined my Shape with much Nicety, were of different Opinions concerning me. They all agreed that I could not be produced according to the regular Laws of Nature, becauſe I was not framed with a Capacity of preſerving my Life, either by Swiftneſs, or climbing of Trees, or digging Holes in the Earth. They obſerved by my Teeth, which they viewed with great exactneſs, that I was a carnivorous Animal; yet moſt Quadrupeds being an overmatch for me, and Field-mice, with ſome others, ſo nimble, they could not imagine how I ſhould be able to ſupport myſelf, unleſs I fed upon Snails and other Inſects, which they offered, by many learned Arguments, to evince that I could not poſſibly do. One of the Virtuoſi ſeemed to think that I might be an Embrio, or abortive Birth. But this Opion was rejected by the other two, who obſerved my Limbs to be perfect and finiſhed, and that I had lived ſeveral Years, as it was manifeſt from my Beard, the Stumps whereof they plainly diſcovered through a Magnifying-Glaſs. They would not allow me to be a Dwarf, becauſe my Littleneſs was beyond all Degrees of Compariſon; for the Queen's favourite Dwarf, the ſmalleſt ever known in that Kingdom, was near thirty Foot high. After much Debate, they concluded, unanimouſly, that I was only *Relplum Scalcath*, which is interpreted literally, *Luſus Naturæ*; a Determination exactly agreeable to the modern Philoſophy of *Europe*, whoſe Profeſſors, diſdaining the old Evaſion of *occult Cauſes*, whereby the Followers of *Ariſtotle* endeavoured in vain to diſguiſe their Ignorance, having invented this wonderful Solution of all Difficulties, to the unſpeakable Advancement of human Knowledge.

After this deciſive Concluſion, I entreated to be heard a Word or two. I applied

applied myself to the King, and assured his Majesty that I came from a Country which abounded with several Millions of both Sexes, and of my own Stature; where the Animals, Trees and Houses were all in Proportion, and where by Consequence I might be as able to defend myself, and to find Sustenance, as any of his Majesty's Subjects could do here: which I took for a full Answer to those Gentlemens Arguments. To this they only replied, with a Smile of Contempt, saying, That the Farmer had instructed me very well in my Lesson. The King, who had a much better Understanding, dismissing his learned Men, sent for the Farmer, who, by my good Fortune, was not yet gone out of Town: Having therefore first examined him privately, and then confronted him with me and the young Girl, his Majeysty began to think what we told him might possibly be true. He desired the Queen to order that a particular Care should be taken of me, and was of Opinion, that *Glumdalclitch* should still continue in her Office of tending me, because he observed we had a great Affection for each other. A convenient Apartment was provided for her at Court; she had a sort of Governess appointed to take Care of her Education, a Maid to dress her, and two other Servants for menial Offices; but the Care of me was wholly appropriated to herself. The Queen commanded her own Cabinet-maker to contrive a Box that might serve me as a Bed-Chamber, after the Model that *Glumdalclitch* and I should agree upon. This Man was a most ingenious Artist, and according to my Directions, in three Weeks, finished for me a Wooden-Chamber of sixteen Foot square, and twelve high, with Sash-Windows, a Door, and two Closets, like a *London* Bed-Chamber. The Board that made the Cieling was to be lifted up and down by two Hinges, to put in a Bed ready furnished by her Majesty's Upholsterer, which *Glumdalclitch* took out every Day to Air, made it with her own Hands, and letting it down at Night locked up the Roof over me. A nice Workman, who was famous for little Curiosities, undertook to make two Chairs, with Backs and Frames, of a Substance not unlike Ivory, and two Tables, with a Cabinet to put my Things in. The Room was quilted on all Sides, as well as the Floor and the Cieling, to prevent any Accident from the Carelessness of those who carried me, and to break the Force of a Jolt when I went in a Coach. I desired a

Lock

Lock for my Door, to prevent the Rats and Mice from coming in: The Smith, after ſeveral Attempts, made the Smalleſt that ever was ſeen among them, for I have known a larger at a Gentleman's Houſe in *England*. I made a Shift to keep the Key in a Pocket of my own, fearing *Glumdalclitch* might loſe it. The Queen likewiſe ordered the thinneſt Silks that could be gotten, to make me Cloaths, not much thicker than an *Engliſh* Blanket, very cumberſome 'till I was accuſtomed to them. They were after the Faſhion of the Kingdom, partly reſembling the *Perſian*, and partly the *Chineſe*, and are a very grave and decent Habit.

The Queen became ſo fond of my Company, that ſhe could not dine without me. I had a Table placed upon the ſame at which her Majeſty eat, juſt at her Elbow, and a Chair to ſit on. *Glumdalclitch* ſtood on a Stool on the Floor, near my Table, to aſſiſt and take care of me. I had an entire Set of Silver Diſhes and Plates, and other Neceſſaries, which, in proportion to thoſe of the Queen, were not much bigger than what I have ſeen of the ſame kind in a *London* Toy-Shop for the Furniture of a Baby-Houſe: Theſe my little Nurſe kept in her Pocket, in a Silver Box, and gave me at Meals as I wanted them, always cleaning them herſelf. No Perſons dined with the Queen but the two Princeſſes Royal, the elder ſixteen Years old, and the younger at that time thirteen and a Month. Her Majeſty uſed to put a Bit of Meat upon one of my Diſhes, out of which I carved for myſelf; and her Diverſion was to ſee me eat in Miniature. For the Queen (who had indeed but a weak Stomach) took up at one Mouthful as much as a Dozen *Engliſh* Farmers could eat at a Meal, which to me was for ſometime a very nauſeous Sight. She would craunch the Wing of a Lark, Bones and all, between her Teeth, although it were nine times as large as that of a full grown Turkey; and put a Bit of Bread in her Mouth, as big as two twelve-penny Loaves. She drank out of a golden Cup, above a Hogſhead at a Draught. Her Knives where twice as long as a Scythe, ſet ſtrait upon the Handle. The Spoons, Forks, and other Inſtruments, were all in the ſame Proportion. I remember when *Glumdalclitch* carried me out of Curioſity to ſee ſome of the Tables at Court, where ten or a dozen of theſe enormous Knives and Forks were

lifted up together, I thought I had never till then, beheld so terrible a Sight.

It is the Custom that every *Wednesday*, (which, as I have before observed, was their *Sabbath*) the King and Queen, with the Royal Issue of both Sexes, dine together in the Apartment of his Majesty, to whom I was now become a great Favourite; and at these times my little Chair and Table were placed at his Left Hand before one of the Saltsellers. This Prince took a Pleasure in conversing with me, enquiring into the Manners, Religion, Laws, Government, and Learning of *Europe*; wherein I gave him the best Account that I was able. His Apprehension was so clear, and his Judgment so exact, that he made very wise Reflections, and Observations upon all I said. But I confess, that after I had been a little too copious in talking of my own beloved Country, of our Trade, and Wars by Sea and Land, of our Schisms in Religion, and Parties in the State; the Prejudices of his Education prevailed so far, that he could not forbear taking me up in his Right Hand, and stroaking me gently with the other, after an hearty Fit of Laughing, asked me, Whether I was a Whig or a Tory? Then turned to his first Minister, who waited behind him with a White-Staff, near as tall as the Mainmast of the *Royal-Sovereign*, he observed how contemptible a Thing was human Grandeur, which could be mimicked by such diminutive Insects as I: And yet, said he, I dare engage, these Creatures have their Titles and Distinctions of Honour, they contrive little Nests and Burrows, that they call Houses and Cities; they make a Figure in Dress and Equipage; they love, they fight, they dispute, they cheat, they betray. And thus he continued on, while my Colour came and went several times, with Indignation to hear our noble Country, the Mistress of Arts and Arms, the Scourge of *France*, the Arbitress of *Europe*, the Seat of Virtue, Piety, Honour and Truth, the Pride and Envy of the World, so contemptuously treated.

But as I was not in a Condition to resent Injuries, so upon mature Thoughts, I began to doubt whether I was injured or no. For having been accustomed several Months to the Sight and Converse of this People, and observed every Object upon which I cast mine Eyes, to be of a proportionable Magnitude, the Horror

ror I had at first conceived from their Bulk and Aspect, was so far worn off, that if I had then beheld a Company of *English* Lords and Ladies in their Finery and Birth-Day Cloaths, acting their several Parts in the most courtly Manner, of strutting, and bowing, and prating; to say the Truth, I should have been strongly tempted to Laugh as much at them as the King and his Grandees did at me. Neither indeed could I forbear smiling at myself, when the Queen used to place me upon her Hand towards a Looking-Glass, by which both our Persons appeared before me in full View together; and there could nothing be more ridiculous than the Comparison: So that I really began to imagine myself dwindled many Degrees below my usual Size.

Nothing angred and mortified me so much as the Queen's Dwarf, who being of the lowest Stature that was ever in that Country (for I verily think he was not full thirty Foot high) became insolent at seeing a Creature so much beneath him, that he would always affect to swagger and look big as he passed by me in the Queen's Anti-Chamber, while I was standing on some Table talking with the Lords and Ladies of the Court, and he seldom failed of a small Word or two upon my Littleness; against which I could only revenge myself by calling him Brother, challenging him to wrestle, and such like Repartees as are usual in the Mouths of *Court Pages*. One Day at Dinner this malicious little Cubb was so nettled with something I had said to him, that raising himself upon the Frame of her Majesty's Chair, he took me up by the Middle, as I was sitting down, not thinking any Harm, and let me drop into a large silver Bowl of Cream, and then ran away as fast as he could. I fell over Head and Ears, and if I had not been a good Swimmer, it might have gone hard with me; for *Glumdalclitch* in that instant happpen'd to be at the other End of the Room, and the Queen was in such a Fright that she wanted Presence of Mind to assist me. But my little Nurse ran to my Relief, and took me out after I had swallowed above a Quart of Cream. I was put to Bed; however, I received no other Damage than the the Loss of a Suit of Cloaths, which was utterly spoiled. The Dwarf was soundly whipped, and as a farther Punishment, forced to drink up the Bowl of Cream, into which he had thrown me, neither was he ever

restored

restored to Favour: For, soon after the Queen bestowed him on a Lady of High Quality, so that I saw him no more, to my very great Satisfaction; for I could not tell to what Extremity such a malicious Urchin might have carried his Resentment.

He had before served me a scurvy Trick, which set the Queen a laughing, although at the same time she was heartily vexed, and would immediately have cashiered him, if I had not been so generous as to intercede. Her Majesty had taken a Marrow-Bone upon her Plate, and after knocking out the Marrow, placed the Bone again in the Dish erect as it stood before; the Dwarf watching his Opportunity, while *Glumdalclitch* was gone to the Side-Board, mounted upon the Stool she stood on to take Care of me at Meals, took me up in both Hands, and squeezing my Legs together, wedged them into the Marrow-Bone above my Waist, where I stuck for sometime, and made a very ridiculous Figure. I believe it was near a Minute before any one knew what was become of me; for I thought it below me to cry out. But as Princes seldom get their Meat hot, my Legs were not scalded, only my Stockings and Breeches in a sad Condition. The Dwarf, at my Entreaty, had no other Punishment than a sound Whipping.

I was frequently rallied by the Queen upon Account of my Fearfulness, and she used to ask me, Whether the People of my Country were as great Cowards as myself? The Occasion was this: The Kingdom is much pester'd with Flies in the Summer; and these odious Insects, each of them as big as a *Dunstable* Lark, hardly gave me any Rest while I sat at Dinner, with their continual humming and buzzing about mine Ears. They would sometimes alight upon my Victuals, and leave their loathsome Excrement or Spawn behind, which to me was very visible, though not to the Natives of that Country, whose large Opticks were not so acute as mine in viewing smaller Objects. Sometimes they would fix upon my Nose or Forehead, where they stung me to the Quick, smelling very offensively, and I could easily trace that viscous Matter, which our Naturalists tell us enables those Creatures to walk with their Feet upwards upon a Cieling. I had much ado to defend myself against these detestable Animals, and could

could not forbear ſtartling when they came upon my Face. It was a common Practice of the Dwarf to catch a Number of theſe Inſects in his Hand, as School-Boys do among us, and let them out ſuddenly under my Noſe on purpoſe to frighten me, and divert the Queen. My Remedy was to cut them in Pieces with my Knife as they flew in the Air, wherein my Dexterity was much admired.

I remember one Morning when *Glumdalclitch* had ſet me in my Box upon a Window, as ſhe uſually did in fair Days to give me Air, for I durſt not venture to let the Box be hung on a Nail out of the Window, (as we do with Cages in *England*) after I had lifted up one of my Saſhes, and ſat down at my Table to eat a Piece of Sweet Cake for my Breakfaſt, above twenty Waſps, allured by the Smell, came flying into the Room, humming louder than the Drones of as many Bagpipes. Some of them ſeized my Cake, and carried it piece-meal away, others flew about my Head and Face, confounding me with the Noiſe, and putting me in the utmoſt Terror of their Stings. However, I had the Courage to riſe and draw my Hanger, and attack them in the Air. I diſpatched four of them, but the reſt got away, and I preſently ſhut my Window. Theſe Creatures were as large as Partridges, I took out their Stings, found them an Inch and a half long, and as ſharp as Needles. I carefully preſerved them all, and having ſince ſhewn them with ſome other Curioſities in ſeveral Parts of *Europe*; upon my Return to *England* I gave three of them to *Greſham College*, and kept the fourth for myſelf.

CHAP. IV.

The Country described. A Proposal for correcting modern Maps. The King's Palace, and some Account of the Metropolis. The Author's Way of travelling. The chief Temple described.

I Now intend to give the Reader a short Description of this Country, as far as I travelled in it, which was not above two thousand Miles round *Lorbrulgrud*, the Metropolis. For, the Queen, whom I always attended, never went further when she accompanied the King in his Progresses, and there staid 'till his Majesty returned from viewing his Frontiers. The whole Extent of this Prince's Dominions reacheth about six thousand Miles in length, and from three to five in breadth. From whence I cannot but conclude that our Geographers of *Europe* are in a great Error, by supposing nothing but Sea between *Japan* and *California*; for it was ever my Opinion, that there must be a Balance of Earth to counterpoise the great Continent of *Tartary*; and therefore they ought to correct their Maps and Charts, by joining this vast Tract of Land to the North-West Parts of *America*, wherein I shall be ready to lend them my Assistance.

The Kingdom is a Peninsula, terminated to the North-East by a Ridge of Mountains thirty Miles high, which are altogether impassable by Reason of the Volcanoes upon the Tops. Neither do the most Learned know what sort of Mortals inhabit beyond those Mountains, or whether they be inhabited at all. On the three other Sides it is bounded by the Ocean. There is not one Sea-port in the whole Kingdom, and those Parts of the Coasts into which the Rivers issue are so full of pointed Rocks and the Sea generally so rough, that there is no venturing with the smallest of their Boats, so that these People are wholly excluded from any Commerce with the rest of the World. But the large Rivers are full of Vessels, and abound with excellent Fish, for they seldom get any from the Sea, because the Sea-Fish are of the same Size with those in *Europe*,, and consequently not worth catching: Whereby it is manifest, that Nature in the Production of

Plants

Plants and Animals of ſo extraordinary a Bulk is wholly confined to this Continent, of which I leave the Reaſons to be determined by Philoſophers. However, they now and then take a Whale that happens to be daſhed againſt the Rocks, which the common People feed on heartily. Theſe Whales I have known ſo large that a Man could hardly carry one upon his Shoulders; and ſometimes for Curioſity they are brought in Hampers to *Lorbrulgrud*: I ſaw one of them in a Diſh at the King's Table, which paſſed for a Rarity, but I did not obſerve he was fond of it; for I think indeed the Bigneſs diſguſted him, although I have ſeen one ſomewhat larger in *Greenland*.

The Country is well inhabited, for it contains fifty one Cities, near an hundred walled Towns, and a great Number of Villages. To ſatisfy my curious Reader, it may be ſufficient to deſcribe *Lorbrulgrud*. This City ſtands upon almoſt two equal Parts on each Side the River that paſſes through. It contains above eighty thouſand Houſes, and about ſix hundred thouſand Inhabitants. It is in length three *Glomglungs* (which make about fifty four *Engliſh* Miles) and two and a half in breadth, as I meaſured it myſelf in the Royal Map, made by the King's Order, which was laid on the Ground on purpoſe for me, and extended an hundred Feet; I placed the Diameter and Circumference ſeveral times bareſoot, and computing by the Scale, meaſured it pretty exactly.

The King's Palace is no regular Edifice, but an Heap of Buildings about ſeven Miles round: The chief Rooms are generally two hundred and forty Foot high, and broad and long in Proportion. A Coach was allowed to *Glumdalclitch* and me, wherein her Governeſs frequently took her out to ſee the Town, or go among the Shops; and was always of the Party, carried in my Box; although the Girl at my own Deſire would often take me out, and hold me in her Hand, that I might more conveniently view the Houſes and the People, as we paſſed along the Streets. I reckoned our Coach to be about a Square of *Weſtminſter-Hall*, but not altogether ſo high; however, I cannot be very exact. One Day the Governeſs ordered our Coachman to ſtop at ſeveral Shops, where the Beggars, watching their Opportunity, crouded to the Sides of the Coach, and gave me the moſt horrible Spectacles that ever an

Engliſh

English Eye beheld. There was a Woman with a Cancer in her Breaſt, ſwelled to a monſtrous Size, full of Holes, in two or three of which I could have eaſily crept, and cover'd my whole Body. There was a Fellow with a Wen in his Neck, larger than five Woolpacks, and another with a couple of wooden Legs, each about twenty foot high. But, the moſt hateful Sight of all was the Lice crawling on their Cloaths. I could ſee diſtinctly the Limbs of theſe Vermin with my naked Eye, much better than thoſe of an *European*, Louſe through a Microſcope, and their Snouts with which they rooted like Swine. They were the firſt that I had ever beheld, and I ſhould have been curious enough to diſſect one of them, if I had proper Inſtruments (which I unluckily left behind me in the Ship) although indeed the Sight was ſo nauſeous, that it perfectly turned my Stomach.

Beſide the large Box in which I was uſually carried, the Queen order'd a ſmaller one to be made for me, of about twelve Foot ſquare and ten high, for the Convenience of travelling, becauſe the other was ſomewhat too large for *Glumdalclitch*'s Lap, and cumberſome in the Coach, it was made by the ſame Artiſt whom I directed in the whole Contrivance. This traveling Cloſet was an exact Square with a Window in the Middle of three of the Squares, and each Window was latticed with Iron Wire on the Outſide, to prevent Accidents in long Journies. On the fourth ſide, which had no Window, two ſtrong Staples were fixed, through which the Perſon that carried me when I had a mind to be on Horſeback, put in a Leathern Belt, and buckled it about his Waiſt. This was always the Office of ſome grave truſty Servant in whom I could confide, whether I attended the King and Queen in their Progreſſes, or were diſpoſed to ſee the Gardens, or pay a Viſit to ſome great Lady or Miniſter of State in the Court, when *Glumdalclitch* happened to be out of Order: For I ſoon began to be known and eſteemed among the greateſt Officers, I ſuppoſe more upon Account of their Majeſty's Favour than any Merit of my own. In Journies, when I was weary of the Coach, a Servant on Horſeback would buckle my Box, and place it on a Cuſhion before him; and there I had a full Proſpect of the Country on three Sides from the three Windows. I had in this Cloſet a Field-Bed and a Ham-

Hammock hung from the Cieling, two Chairs and a Table neatly screwed to the Floor, to prevent being tossed about by the Agitation of the Horse or the Coach. And having been long used to Sea-Voyages, those Motions, although sometimes very violent, did not much discompose me.

Whenever I had a Mind to see the Town it was in my Travelling-Closet, which *Glumdalclitch* held in her Lap in a kind of open Sedan, after the Fashion of the Country, born by four Men, and attended by two others in the Queen's Livery. The People who had often heard of me, were very curious to croud about the Sedan, and the Girl was complaisant enough to make the Bearers stop, and to take me in her Hand that I might be more conveniently seen.

I was very desirous to see the chief Temple, and particularly the Tower belonging to it, which is reckoned the highest in the Kingdom. Accordingly one Day my Nurse carried me thither, but I may truly say I came back disappointed; for, the Height is not above three thousand Foot, and reckoning from the Ground to the highest Pinnacle Top; which allowing for the Difference between the Size of those People, and us in *Europe*, is no great Matter for Admiration, nor at all equal in proportion, (if I rightly remember) to *Salisbury* Steeple. But not to detract from a Nation to which during my Life I shall acknowledge myself extremely obliged, it must be allowed that whatever this famous Tower wants in Height is amply made up in Beauty and Strength. For the Walls are near an hundred Foot thick, built of hewn Stone, whereof each is about forty Foot square, and adorned on all Sides with Statues of Gods and Emperors cut in Marble larger than the Life, placed in their several Niches. I measured a little Finger which had fallen down from one of the Statues, and lay unperceived among some Rubbish, and found it exactly four Foot and an Inch in Length. *Glumdalclitch* wrapped it up in a Handkerchief, and carried it home in her Pocket to keep among other Trinkets, of which the Girl was very fond, as Children at her Age usually are.

The King's Kitchen is indeed a noble Building, vaulted at Top, and about six hundred Foot high. The great Oven is not so wide by ten Paces as the Cupola

at St. *Paul's*: For I measured the latter on purpose after my Return. But if I should describe the Kitchen-Grate, the prodigious Pots and Kettles, the Joints of Meat turning on the Spits, with many other Particulars, perhaps I should be hardly believed; at least a severe Critick would be apt to think I enlarged a little, as Travellers are often suspected to do. To avoid which Censure, I fear I have run too much in the other Extream; and that if this Treatise should happen to be translated into the Language of *Brobdingnag*, (which is the general name of that Kingdom) and transmitted thither, the King and his People would have reason to complain that I had done them an Injury by a false and diminutive Representation.

His Majesty seldom keeps above six hundred Horses in his Stables: They are generally from fifty-four to sixty Foot high. But when he goes abroad on solemn Days, he is attended for State by a Militia Guard of five hundred Horse, which indeed I thought was the most splendid Sight that could be ever beheld, 'till I saw part of his Army in Battalia, whereof I shall find another Occasion to speak.

CHAP. V.

Several Adventures that happened to the Author. The Execution of a Criminal. The Author shews his Skill in Navigation.

I Should have lived happy enough in that Country, if my Littleness had not exposed me to several ridiculous and troublesome Accidents: Some of which I shall venture to relate. *Glumdalclitch* often carried me into the Gardens of the Court in my smaller Box, and would sometimes take me out of it, and hold me in her Hand, or set me down to walk. I remember, before the Dwarf left the Queen, he followed us one Day into those Gardens, and my Nurse having set me down, he and I being close together, near some Dwarf Apple Trees, I must need shew my Wit by a silly Illusion between him and the Trees, which happens

pens to hold in their Language as it doth in ours. Whereupon, the malicious Rogue watching his Opportunity, when I was walking under one of them, ſhook it directly over my Head, by which a Dozen Apples, each of them near as large as a *Briſtol* Barrel, came tumbling about my Ears; one of them hit me on the Back as I chanced to ſtoop, and knocked me down flat on my Face, but I received no other Hurt, and the Dwarf was pardoned at my Deſire, becauſe I had given the Provocation.

Another Day *Glumdalclitch* left me on a ſmooth Graſs-Plat to divert myſelf, while ſhe walked at ſome Diſtance with her Governeſs. In the mean time there ſuddenly fell ſuch a violent Shower of Hail that I was immediately by the Force of it ſtruck to the Ground: And when I was down the Hail-Stones gave me ſuch cruel Bangs all over the Body, as if I had been pelted with Tennis-Balls; however I made a Shift to creep on all four, and ſhelter myſelf by lying flat on my Face on the Lee-ſide of a Border of Lemon Thyme, but ſo bruiſed from Head to Foot that I could not go abroad in ten Days. Neither is this at all to be wonder'd at, becauſe Nature in that Country obſerving the ſame Proportion thro' all her Operations, a Hail-Stone is near eighteen hundred times as large as one in *Europe*, which I can aſſert upon Experience, having been ſo curious to weigh and meaſure them.

But, a more dangerous Accident happened to me in the ſame Garden, when my little Nurſe believing ſhe had put me in a ſecure Place, which I often entreated her to do, that I might enjoy my own Thoughts, and having left my Box at home to avoid the Trouble of it, went to another Part of the Gardens with her Governeſs and ſome Ladies of her Acquaintance. While ſhe was abſent, and out of Hearing, a ſmall white Spaniel belonging to one of the chief Gardeners, having got by Accident into the Garden, happened to range near the Place where I lay: The Dog following the Scent, came directly up, and taking me in his Mouth, ran ſtrait to his Maſter, wagging his Tail, and ſet me gently on the Ground. By good Fortune he had been ſo well taught, that I was carried between his Teeth without the leaſt Hurt, or even tearing my Cloaths. But the poor Gardener who knew me well, and had a great Kindneſs for me, was

in

in a terrible Fright: He gently took me up in both his Hands and aſked me how I did; but I was ſo amazed and out of Breath, that I could not ſpeak a Word. In a few Minutes I came to myſelf, and he carried me ſafe to my little Nurſe, who by this Time had returned to the Place where ſhe left me, and was in cruel Agonies when I did not appear, nor anſwer when ſhe called: She ſeverely reprimanded the Gardener on Account of his Dog. But the Thing was huſhed up, and never known at Court; for the Girl was afraid of the Queen's Anger, and truly as to myſelf, I thought it would not be for my Reputation that ſuch a Story ſhould go about.

This Accident abſolutely determined *Glumdalclitch* never to truſt me abroad for the future out of her Sight. I had been long afraid of this Reſolution, and therefore conceal'd from her ſome little unlucky Adventures that happened in thoſe Times when I was left by myſelf. Once a Kite, hovering over the Garden, made a ſtoop at me, and if I had not reſolutely drawn my Hanger, and run under a thick Eſpalier, he would have certainly carried me away in his Talons: Another time walking to the Top of a freſh Mole-hill, I fell to my Neck in the Hole, through which that Animal had caſt up the Earth, and coined ſome Lie, not worth remembring, to excuſe myſelf for ſpoiling my Cloaths. I likewiſe broke my Right Shin againſt the Shell of a Snail, which I happened to ſtumble over, as I was walking alone thinking on poor *England*.

I cannot tell whether I were more pleaſed or mortified, to obſerve in thoſe ſolitary Walks, that the ſmaller Birds did not appear to be at all afraid of me, but would hop about within a Yard's diſtance, looking for Worms, and other Food, with as much Indifference and Security, as if no Creature at all were near them. I remember, a Thruſh had the Confidence to ſnatch out of my Hand, with his Bill, a piece of Cake that *Glumdalclitch* had juſt given me for my Breakfaſt. When I attempted to catch any of theſe Birds, they would boldly turn againſt me, endeavouring to pick my Fingers, which I durſt not venture within their Reach; and then they would turn back unconcerned to hunt for Worms or Snails, as they did before. But one Day I took a thick Cudgel, and threw it with all my Strength

ſo luckily at a Linnet, that I knocked him down, and ſeized him by the Neck with both my Hands, and ran with him in Triumph to my Nurſe. However, the Bird, who had only been ſtunned, recovering himſelf, gave me ſo many Boxes with his Wings on both ſides of my Head and Body, though I held him at Arm's length, and was out of the Reach of his Claws, that I was twenty times thinking to let him go But I was ſoon relieved by one of our Servants, who wrung off the Bird's Neck, and I had him the next Day for Dinner, by the Queen's Command. This Linnet as near as I can remember, ſeemed to be ſomewhat larger than an *England* Swan.

The Maids of Honour often invited *Glumdalclitch* to their Apartments, and deſired ſhe would bring me along with her, on purpoſe to have the Pleaſure of ſeeing and touching me. They would often ſtrip me naked from Top to Toe, and lay me at full Length in their Boſoms; wherewith I was much diſguſted; becauſe, to ſay the Truth, a very offenſive Smell came from their Skins; which I do not mention or intend ſo to the Diſadvantage of thoſe excellent Ladies, for whom I have all Manner of Reſpect; but, I conceive that my Senſe was more accute in Proportion to my Littleneſs, and that thoſe illuſtrious Perſons were no more diſagreeable to their Lovers, or to each other, than People of the ſame Quality are with us in *England*. And, after all, I found their natural Smell was much more ſupportable than when they uſed Perfumes, under which I immediately ſwooned away. I cannot forget that an intimate Friend of mine in *Lilliput*, took the Freedom in a warm Day, when I had uſed a good deal of Exerciſe, to complain of a ſtrong Smell about me, although I am as little faulty that way as moſt of my Sex: But I ſuppoſe his Faculty of Smelling was as nice with Regard to me, as mine was to that of this People. Upon this Point, I cannot forbear doing Juſtice to the Queen my Miſtreſs, and *Glumdalclitch* my Nurſe, whoſe Perſons were as ſweet as thoſe of any Lady in *England*.

That which gave me the moſt Uneaſineſs among theſe Maids of Honour, (when my Nurſe carried me to viſit them) was to ſee them uſe me without any Manner of Ceremony, like a Creature who had no ſort of Conſequence. For, they would ſtrip themſelves to the Skin, and put

put on their Smocks in my Presence, while I was placed on their Toylet directly before their naked Bodies, which, I am sure, to me was very far from being a tempting Sight, or from giving me any other Emotions, than those of Horror and Disgust. Their Skins appeared so coarse and uneven, so variously coloured, when I saw them near, with a Mole here and there as broad as a Trencher, and Hairs hanging from it thicker than Pack-threads, to say nothing farther concerning the rest of their Persons. Neither did they at all scruple while I was by to discharge what they had drank, to the Quantity of at least two Hogsheads, in a Vessel that held above three Tons. The handsomest among these Maids of Honour, a pleasant, frolicksome Girl of sixteen. would somtimes set me astride upon one of her Nipples, with many other Tricks, wherein the Reader will excuse me for not being over particular. But I was so much displeased, that I entreated *Glumdalclitch* to contrive some Excuse for not seeing that young Lady any more.

One Day a young Gentleman, who was Nephew to my Nurse's Governess, came and pressed them both to see an Execution. It was of a Man who had murdered one of that Gentleman's intimate Acquaintance. *Glumdalclitch* was prevailed on to be one of the Company, very much against her Inclination, for she was naturally tender-hearted: And, as for myself, although I abhorred such kind of Spectacles, yet my Curiosity tempted me to see something that I thought must be extraordinary. The Malefactor was fixed in a Chair upon a Scaffold erected for that Purpose, and his Head cut of at a Blow with a Sword of about forty Foot long. The Veins and Arteries spouted out such a prodigious Quantity of Blood, and so high in the Air, that the great *Jett deau* at *Versailles*, was not equal for the time it lasted; and the Head, when it fell on the Scaffold Floor, gave such a Bounce, as made me start, although I were at least half an *English* Mile distant.

The Queen, who often used to hear me talk of my Sea-Voyages, and took all Occasions to divert me when I was melancholy, asked me whether I knew how to handle a Sail, or an Oar, and whether a little Exercise of Rowing might not be convenient for my Health? I answered, that I understood both very well: For although my proper Employment

ment had been to be Surgeon or Doctor to the yhip, yet often upon a Pinch, I was forced to work like a common Mariner. But I could not ſee how this could be done in their Country where the ſmalleſt Wherry was equal to a firſt Rate Man of War among us, and ſuch a Boat as I could manage would never live in any of their Rivers. Her Majeſty ſaid, if I would contrive a Boat, her own Joiner ſhould make it, and ſhe would provide a Place for me to ſail in. The Fellow was an ingenious Workman, and, by my Inſtructions, in ten Days, finiſhed a Pleaſure-Boat, with all its Tackling, able conveniently to hold eight *Europeans*. When it was finiſhed, the Queen was ſo delighted, that ſhe ran with it in her Lap to the King, who ordered it to be put in a Ciſtern full of Water, with me in it, by way of Trial; where I could not manage my two Sculls, or little Oars for want of Room. But the Queen had before contrived another Project. She ordered the Joiner to make a wooden Trough of three hundred Foot long, fifty broad, and eight deep; which being well pitched, to prevent leaking, was placed on the Floor along the Wall, in an outer Room of the Palace. It had a Cock near the Bottom to let out the Water when it began to grow ſtale, and two Servants could eaſily fill it in half an Hour. Here I often uſed to row for my own Diverſion, as well as that of the Queen and her Ladies, who thought themſelves well entertained with my Skill and Agility. Sometimes I would put up my Sail, and then my Buſineſs was only to ſteer, while the Ladies gave me a Gale with their Fans, and when they were weary, ſome of the Pages would blow my Sail forward with their Breath, while I ſhewed my Art by ſteering Starboard or Larboard as I pleaſed. When I had done *Glumdalclitch* always carried back my Boat into her Cloſet, and hung it on a Nail to dry.

In this Exerciſe I once met an Accident, which had like to have coſt me my Life: For, one of the Pages having put my Boat into the Trough, the Governeſs, who attended *Glumdalclitch*, very officiouſly lifted me up to place me in the Boat, but I happened to ſlip through her Fingers, and ſhould infallibly have fallen down forty Foot upon the Floor, if by the luckieſt Chance in the World, I had not been ſtopped by a Corking-pin that ſtuck in the good Gentlewoman's Stomacher; the Head of the Pin paſſed between

my

my Shirt and the Waiſt-band of my Breeches and thus I was held by the Middle in the Air, 'till *Glumdalclitch* ran to my Relief.

Another time, one of the Servants, whoſe Office it was to fill my Trough every third Day with freſh Water, was ſo careleſs to let a huge Frog (not perceiving it) ſlip out of his Pail. The Frog lay concealed 'till I was put into my Boat, but then, ſeeing a reſting-Place, climbed up, and made it lean ſo much on one Side, that I was forced to balance it with all my Weight on the other to prevent overturning. When the Frog was got in, it hopped at once half the length of the Boat, and then over my Head, backwards and forwards, daubing my Face and Cloaths with his odious Slime. The Largeneſs of his Features made it appear the moſt deformed Animal that can be conceived. However, I deſired *Glumdalclitch* to let me deal with it alone. I banged it a good while with one of my Sculls, and at laſt forced it to leap out of the Boat.

But the greateſt Danger I ever underwent in that Kingdom, was from a Monkey, who belonged to one of the Clerks of the Kitchen. *Glumdalclitch* had locked me up in her Cloſet, while ſhe went ſomewhere upon Buſineſs, or a Viſit. The Weather being very warm, the Cloſet-Window was left open, as well as the Windows and the Door of my bigger Box, in which I uſually lived, becauſe of its Largeneſs and Conveniency. As I ſat quietly meditating at my Table, I heard ſomething bounce in at the Cloſet-Window, and skip about from one Side to the other; whereat, although I were much alarmed, yet I ventured to look out, but not ſtirring from my Seat; and then I ſaw this frolickſome Animal, friſking and leaping up and down, 'till at laſt he came to my Box, which he ſeemed to view with great Pleaſure and Curioſity, peeping in at the Door and every Window. I retreated to the farther Corner of my Room or Box, but the Monkey looking in, at every ſide, put me into ſuch a Fright, that I wanted preſence of Mind to conceal myſelf under the Bed, as I might eaſily have done. After ſome time ſpent in peeping, grinning, and chattering, he at laſt eſpied me, and reaching one of his Paws in at the Door, as a Cat does when ſhe plays with a Mouſe, althogh I often ſhifted Place to avoid him, he at length caught hold of

the

the Lappet of my Coat, which (being made of that Country Cloth, was very thick and ſtrong) and dragged me out. He took me up in his Right Fore-foot, and held me as a Nurſe does a Child ſhe is going to ſuckle, juſt as I have ſeen the ſame ſort of Creature do with a Kitten in *Europe*: And when I offered to ſtruggle, he ſqueezed me ſo hard, that I thought it more prudent to ſubmit. I have good reaſon to believe that he took me for one of his own Species, by his often ſtroaking my Face very gently with his other Paw. In theſe Diverſions he was interrupted by a Noiſe at the Cloſet-Door, as if ſome-body were opening it; whereupon he ſuddenly leaped up to the Window, at which he had come in, and thence upon the Leads and Gutters, walking upon three Legs, and holding me in the fourth, 'till he clamber'd up to a Roof that was next to ours. I heard *Glumdalclitch* give a Shriek at the Moment he was carrying me out. The poor Girl was almoſt diſtracted: That Quarter of the Place was all in an Uproar, the Servants ran for Ladders; the Monkey was ſeen by hundreds in the Court, ſitting upon the Ridge of a Building, holding me like a Baby in one of his Fore-paws, and feeding me with the other, by cramming into my Mouth ſome Victuals he had ſqueezed out of the Bag, on one Side of his Chops, and patting me when I would not eat; whereat many of the Rabble below could not forbear laughing; neither do I think they juſtly ought to be blamed, for without Queſtion the Sight was ridiculous enough to every body but myſelf. Some of the People threw up Stones, hoping to drive the Monkey down; but this was ſtrictly forbidden, or elſe very probably my Brains had been daſhed out.

The Ladders were now applied, and mounted by ſeveral Men, which the Monkey obſerving, and finding himſelf almoſt encompaſſed; not being able to make Speed enough with his three Legs, let me drop on a Ridge-Tyle, and made his Eſcape. Here I ſat for ſome time three hundred Foot from the Ground, expecting every Moment to be blown down by the Wind, or to fall by my own Giddineſs, and come tumbling over and over from the Ridge to the Eves: But an honeſt Lad, one of my Nurſe's Footmen, climbing up, and putting me into his Breeches-Pocket brought me down ſafe.

I was almoſt choaked with the filthy Stuff the Monkey had crammed down my Throat; but my dear little Nurſe picked it out of my Mouth with a ſmall Needle, and then I fell a vomiting, which gave me great Relief. Yet I was ſo weak, and bruiſed in the Sides, with the Squeezes given me by this odious Animal, that I was forced to keep my Bed a Fortnight. The King, Queen, and all the Court, ſent every Day to enquire after my Health, and her Majeſty made me ſeveral Viſits during my Sickneſs. The Monkey was killed, and an Order made that no ſuch Animal ſhould be kept about the Palace.

When I attended the King after my Recovery, to return him Thanks for his Favours, he was pleaſed to rally me a good deal upon this Adventure. He aſked me what my Thoughts and Speculations were while I lay in the Monkey's Paw; how I liked the Victuals he gave me; his Manner of Feeding; and whether the freſh Air on the Roof had ſharpen'd my Stomach. He deſired to know what I would have done upon ſuch an Occaſion in my own Country. I told his Majeſty, that in *Europe* we had no Monkeys, except ſuch as were brought for Curioſities from other Places, and ſo ſmall, that I could deal with a dozen of them together if they preſumed to attack me. And as for that monſtrous Animal with whom I was ſo lately engaged, (it was indeed as large as an Elephant,) if my Fears had ſuffered me to think ſo far as to make uſe of my Hanger, (looking fiercely and clapping my Hand upon the Hilt as I ſpoke,) when he poked his Paw into my Chamber, perhaps I ſhould have given him ſuch a Wound, as would have made him glad to withdraw it with more Haſte than he put it in. This he deliver'd to me in a firm Tone, like a Perſon who was jealous leſt his Honour ſhould be called in Queſtion. However, my Speech produced nothing elſe beſides a loud Laughter, which all the Reſpect due to his Majeſty, from thoſe about him could not make them contain. This made me reflect how vain an Attempt it is for a Man to endeavour doing himſelf Honour among thoſe, who are out of all Degree, Equality or Compariſon with him. And yet I have ſeen the Moral of my own Behaviour very frequent in *England* ſince my Return, where a little contemptible Varlet, without the leaſt Title to Birth, Perſon, Wit, or common Senſe,

ſhall

ſhall preſume to look with Importance, and put himſelf upon a Foot with the greateſt Perſons of the Kingdom.

I was every Day furniſhing the Court with ſome ridiculous Story; *Glumdalclitch*, although ſhe loved me to Exceſs, yet was arch enough to inform the Queen, whenever I committed any Folly that ſhe thought would be diverting to her Majeſty. The Girl who had been out of Order, was carry'd by her Governeſs to take the Air about an Hour's Diſtance, or thirty Miles from Town. They alighted out of the Coach near a ſmall Foot Path in the Field, and *Glumdalclitch* ſetting down my Travelling-Box, I went out of it to walk. There was a Cow dung in the Path, and I muſt needs try my Activity by attempting to leap over it. I took a Run but unfortunately jump'd ſhort, and found myſelf juſt in the Middle up to my Knees. I waded thro' with ſome Difficulty, and one of the Footmen wiped me as clean as he could with his Handkerchief; for I was filthily bemired, and my Nurſe confined me to my Box 'till we returned Home; where the Queen was ſoon informed of what had paſſed, and the Footman ſpread it about the Court; ſo that all the Mirth, for ſome Days, was at my Expence.

CHAP. VI.

Several Contrivances of the Author to pleaſe the King and Queen. He ſhews his Skill in Muſick. The King enquires into the State of Europe, *which the Author relates to him. The King's Obſervations thereon.*

I Uſed to attend the King's Levee once or twice a Week, and had often ſeen him under the Barber's Hand, which indeed was at firſt very terrible to behold: For the Razor was almoſt twice as long as an ordinary Scythe. His Majeſty according to the Cuſtom of the Country, was only ſhaved twice a Week. I once prevailed on the Barber to give me ſome of the Suds or Lather, out of which I picked forty or fifty of the ſtrongeſt Stumps of Hair. I then took a Piece of fine

fine Wood, and cut it like the back of a Comb, making ſeveral Holes in it at equal diſtance with as ſmall a Needle as I could get from *Glumdalclitch*. I fixed in the Stumps ſo artificially, ſcraping and ſloping them with my Knife towards the Points, that I made a very tolerable Comb; which was a ſeaſonable Supply, my own being ſo much broken in the Teeth, that it was almoſt uſeleſs: Neither did I know any Artiſt in that Country ſo nice and exact, as would undertake to make me another.

And this puts me in Mind of an Amuſement wherein I ſpent many of my leiſure Hours. I deſired the Queen's Woman to ſave for me the Combings of her Majeſty's Hair, whereof in time I got a good Quantity, and conſulting with my Friend the Cabinet-maker, who had received general Orders to do little Jobbs for me, I directed him to make two Chair-frames, no larger than thoſe I had in my Box, and then to bore little Holes with a fine Awl round thoſe Parts where I deſigned the Backs and Seats; through theſe Holes I wove the the ſtrongeſt Hairs I could pick out, juſt after the Manner of of Cane-Chairs in *England*. When they were finiſhed, I made a Preſent of them to her Majeſty, who kept them in her Cabinet, and uſed to ſhew them for Curioſities, as indeed they were the Wonder of every one that beheld them. The Queen would have had me ſit upon one of theſe Chairs, but I abſolutely refuſed to obey her, proteſting I would rather die a thouſand Deaths, than place a diſhonourable Part of my Body on thoſe precious Hairs that once adorned her Majeſty's Head. Of theſe Hairs (as I had always a mechanical Genius) I likewiſe made a neat little Purſe about five Foot long, with her Majeſty's Name decyphered in Gold Letters which I gave to *Glumdalclitch*, by the Queen's Conſent. To ſay the Truth, it was more for ſhew than Uſe, being not of Strength to bear the Weight of the larger Coins, and therefore ſhe kept nothing in it but ſome little Toys that Girls are fond of.

The King, who delighted in Muſick, had frequent Conſorts at Court, to which I was ſometimes carried, and ſet in my Box on a Table to hear them: But the Noiſe was ſo great that I could hardly diſtinguiſh the Tunes. I am confident that all the Drums and Trumpets of a Royal Army, beating and ſounding together juſt at our Ears, could not equal it.

My

My Practice was to have my Box removed from the Places where the Performers sat, as far as I could, then to shut the Doors and Windows of it, and draw the Window-curtains; after which I found their Musick not disagreeable.

I had learned in my Youth to play a little upon the Spinnet. *Glumdalclitch*, kept one in her Chamber, and a Master attended twice a Week to teach her: I call it a Spinnet, because it somewhat resembled that Instrument, and was play'd upon in the same Manner. A Fancy came into my Head that I would entertain the King and Queen with an *English* Tune upon this Instrument. But this appear'd extremely difficult: For the Spinnet was near sixty Foot long, each Key being almost a Foot wide, so that with my Arms extended, I could not reach to above five Keys, and to press them down requir'd a good smart stroak with my Fist, which would be too great a Labour, and to no Purpose. The Method I contrived was this. I prepared two round Sticks about the Bigness of common Cudgels; they were thicker at one End than the other, and I cover'd the thicker Ends with a piece of a Mouse's Skin, that by rapping on them I might neither damage the Tops of the Keys, nor interrupt the Sound. Before the Spinnet a Bench was placed about four Foot below the Keys, and I was put upon the Bench. I ran sideling upon i that Way and this, as fast as I could, banging the proper Keys with my two Sticks, and made a shift to play a Jigg, to the great Satisfaction of both their Majesties: But it was the most violent Exercise I ever underwent, and yet I could not strike above sixteen Keys, nor consequently, play the Bass and Treble together as other Artists do; which was a great Disadvantage to my Performance.

The King, who, as I before observed, was a Prince of excellent Understanding, would frequently order that I should be brought in my Box, and set upon the Table in his Closet: He would then command me to bring one of my Chairs out of the Box, and sit down within three Yards distance upon the Top of the Cabinet, which brought me almost to a level with his Face. In this Manner I had several Conversations with him. I one Day took the Freedom to tell his Majesty, that the Contempt he discovered towards *Europe*, and the rest of the World, did

not ſeem anſwerable to thoſe excellent Qualities of the Mind he was Maſter of. That Reaſon did not extend it itſelf with the Bulk of the Body: On the contrary, we obſerved in our Country, that the talleſt Perſons were uſually leaſt provided with it. That among other Animals, Bees and Ants had the Reputation of more Induſtry, Art and Sagacity, than many of the larger kinds; and that as inconſiderable as he took me to be, I hoped I might live to do his Majeſty ſome ſignal Service. The King heard me with Attention, and began to conceive a much better Opinion of me than he had ever before. He deſired I would give him as exact an Account of the Government of *England*, as I poſſibly could; becauſe, as fond as Princes commonly are of their own Cuſtoms, (for ſo he conjectured of other Monarchs by my former Diſcourſes,) he ſhould be glad to hear of any thing that might deſerve imitation.

Imagine with thyſelf, courteous Reader, how often I then wiſhed for the Tongue of *Demoſthenes* or *Cicero*, that might have enabled me to celebrate the Praiſe of my own dear native Country in a Stile equal to its Merits and Felicity.

I began my Diſcourſe by informing his Majeſty that our Dominions conſiſted of two Iſlands, which compoſed three mighty Kingdoms under one Sovereign, beſides our Plantations in *America*. I dwelt long upon the Fertility of our Soil, and the Temperature of our Climate. I then ſpoke at large upon the Conſtitution of an *Engliſh* Parliament, partly made up of an illuſtrious Body called the Houſe of Peers, Perſons of the nobleſt Blood, and of the moſt antient and ample Patrimonies. I deſcribed that extraordinary Care always taken of their Education in Arts and Arms, to qualify them for being Counſellors both to the King and Kingdom; to have a Share in the Legiſlature; to be Members of the higheſt Court of Judicature, from whence there could be no Appeal; and to be Champions always ready for the Defence of their Prince and Country, by their Valour, Conduct and Fidelity. That theſe were the Ornament and Bulwark of the Kingdom, worthy Followers of their moſt renowned Anceſtors, whoſe Honour had been the Reward of their Virtue, from which their Poſterity were never once known to degenerate. To theſe were joined ſeveral holy Perſons, as part of

that

that Assembly, under the Title of Bishops, whose peculiar Business is to take care of Religion, and of those who instruct the People therein. These were searched and sought out through the whole Nation, by the Prince and his wisest Counsellors, among such of the Priesthood as were most deservedly distinguished by the Sanctity of their Lives, and the Depth of their Erudition, who were indeed the spiritual Fathers of the Clergy and the People.

That the other Part of the Parliment consisted of another Party called the House of Commons, who are all principal Gentlemen *freely* picked and culled out by the People themselves, for their great Abilities and Love of their Country, to represent the Wisdom of the whole Nation. And these two Bodies make up the most august Assembly in *Europe*, to whom, in Conjunction with the Prince, the whole Legislature is committed.

I then descended to the Courts of Justice, over which the Judges, those venerable Sages and Interpreters of the Law presided, for determining the disputed Rights and Properties of Men, as well as for the Punishment of Vice, and protection of Innocence. I mentioned the prudent Managment of our Treasury, the Valour and Atcheivements of our Forces by Sea and Land. I computed the Number of our People, by reckoning how many Millions there might be of each religious Sect, or political Party among us. I did not omit even our Sports and Pastimes, or any other Particular, which I thought might redound to the Honour of my Country. And I finished all with a brief historical Account of Affairs and Events in *England* for about an hundred Years past.

This Conversation was not ended under five Audiences, each of several Hours, and the King heard the whole with great Attention, frequently taking Notes of what I spoke, as well as Memorandums of all Questions he intended to ask me.

When I had put an End to these long Discourses, his Majesty in a sixth Audience consulting his Notes, proposed many Doubts and Queries, and Objections, upon every Article. He asked what Methods were used to cultivate the Minds and Bodies of our young Nobility, and in what kind of Business they commonly

monly ſpent the firſt and teachable Part of their Lives. What Courſe was taken to ſupply that Aſſembly when any noble Family became an extinct. What Qualifications were neceſſary in thoſe who are to be created new Lords: Whether the Humour of the Prince, a Sum of Money to a Court Lady, or a prime Miniſter, or a Deſign of ſtrengthning a Party oppoſite to the publick Intereſt, ever happen'd to be Motives in thoſe Advancements. What Share of Knowledge theſe Laws had in the Laws of their Country, and how they came by it, ſo as to enable them to decide the Properties of their Fellow Subjects in the laſt Reſort. Whether they were always ſo free from Avarice, Partialities, or Want, that a Bribe, or ſome other ſiniſter View, could have no Place among them. Whether thoſe holy Lords I ſpoke of were always promoted to that Rank upon Account of their Knowledge in religious Matters, and the Sanctity of their Lives, had never been Compliers with the Times while they were common Prieſts, or ſlaviſh proſtitute Chaplains to ſome Nobleman, whoſe Opinions they continued ſervilely to follow after they were admitted into that Aſſembly.

He then deſired to know what Arts were practiſed in electing thoſe whom I called Commoners: Whether a Stranger with a ſtrong Purſe might not influence the vulgar Votes to chuſe him before their own Landlord, or the moſt conſiderable Gentleman in the Neighbourhood. How it came to paſs, that People were ſo violently bent upon getting into this Aſſembly, which I allowed to be a great Trouble and Expence, often to the Ruin of their Families, without any Salary or Penſion: Becauſe that appeared ſuch an exalted Strain of Virtue and publick Spirit, that his Majeſty ſeemed to doubt it might poſſibly not be always ſincere: And he deſired to know whether ſuch zealous Gentlemen could have any Views of refunding themſelves for the Charges and Trouble they were at, by ſacrificing the publick Good to the Deſigns of a weak and vicious Prince in Conjunction with a corrupted Miniſtry. He multiplied his Queſtions, and ſifted me thoroughly upon every Part of this Head, propoſing numberleſs Enquiries and Objections, which I think it not prudent or convenient to repeat.

Upon what I ſaid in relation to our Courts of Juſtice, his Majeſty deſired to be

be ſatisfied, in ſeveral Points: And, this I was the better able to do, having been formerly almoſt ruined by a long Suit of Chancery, which was decreed for me with Coſts. He aſked what time was uſually ſpent in determining between Right and Wrong, and what Degree of Expence. Whether Advocates and Orators had Liberty to plead in Cauſes manifeſtly known to be unjuſt, vexatious, or oppreſſive. Whether Party in Religion or Politicks were obſerved to be of any Weight in the Scale of Juſtice. Whether thoſe pleading Orators were Perſons educated in the general Knowledge of Equity or only in provincial, national, and other local Cuſtoms. Whether they or their Judges had any Part in penning thoſe Laws which they aſſumed the Liberty of interpreting and gloſſing upon at their Pleaſure. Whether they had ever at different times pleaded for and againſt the ſame Cauſe, and cited Precedents to prove contrary Opinions. Whether they were a rich or a poor Corporation. Whether they received any pecuniary Reward for pleading or delivering their Opinions. And particularly, whether they were ever admitted as Members in the loweſt Senate.

He fell next upon the Management of our Treaſury, and ſaid, he thought my Memory had failed me, becauſe I computed our Taxes at above five or ſix Millions a Year, and when I came to mention the Iſſues, he found they ſometimes amounted to more than double; for the Notes he had taken were very particular in this Point, becauſe he hoped as he told me, that the Knowledge of our Conduct might be uſeful to him, and he could not be deceived in his Calculations. But, if what I told him were true, he was ſtill at a Loſs how a Kingdom could run out of its Eſtate like a private Perſon. He aſked me, who were our Creditors, and where we ſhould find Money to pay them. He wondered to hear me talk of ſuch chargeable and expenſive Wars; that certainly we muſt be a quarrelſome People, or live among very bad Neighbours, and that our Generals muſt needs be richer than our Kings. He aſked what Buſineſs we had out of our own Iſlands, unleſs upon the Score of Trade or Treaty, or to defend the Coaſts with our Fleet. Above all, he was amazed to hear me talk of a mercenary ſtanding Army in the midſt of Peace, and among a free People. He ſaid, if we were governed by our own Conſent in the Per-

ſons of our Repreſentatives, he could not imagine of whom we were afraid, or againſt whom we were to fight; and would hear my Opinion, whether a private Man's Houſe might not better be defended by himſelf, his Children and Family, than by half a dozen Raſcals picked up at a Venture in the Streets, for ſmall Wages, who might get an hundred times more by cutting their Throats.

He laughed at my odd kind of Arithmetick (as he was pleaſed to call it) in in reckoning the Numbes of our People by a Computation drawn from the ſeveral Sects among us in Religion and Politicks. He ſaid, he knew no Reaſon, why thoſe who entertain Opinions prejudicial to the Publick ſhould be obliged to change, or ſhould be obliged to conceal them. And as it was Tyranny in any Government to require the firſt, ſo it was Weakneſs not to enforce the ſecond: For a Man may be allowed to keep Poiſons in his Cloſet, but not to vend them about for Cordials.

He obſerved, that among the Diverſions of our Nobility and Gentry, I had mentioned Gaming. He deſired to know at what Age this Entertainment was uſually taken up, and when it was laid down; how much of their Time it employed; whether it ever went ſo high as to effect their Fortunes: Whether mean vicious People by their Dexterity in that Art, might not arrive at great Riches, and ſometimes keep our Nobles in Dependance, as well as to habituate them to vile Companions, wholly take them from the Improvement of their Minds, and force them, (by the Loſſes they have received,) to learn and practiſe that infamous Dexterity upon others.

He was perfectly aſtoniſhed with the hiſtorical Account I gave him of our Affairs during the laſt Century, proteſting it was only a Heap of Conſpiracies, Rebellions, Murders and Maſſacres, Revolutions, Baniſhments, the very worſt Effects that Avarice, Faction, Hypocriſy, Perfidiouſneſs, Cruelty, Rage, Madneſs, Hatred, Envy, Luſt, Malice, or Ambition, could produce.

His Majeſty in another Audience was at the Pains to recapitulate the Sum of all I had ſpoken, compared the Queſtions he made with the Anſwers I had given; then taking me into his Hands, and ſtroaking

ing me gently, delivered himself in these Words, which I shall never forget, nor the Manner he spoke them in: My little Friend *Grildrig*, you have a made a most admirable Panegyrick upon your Country: You have clearly proved that Ignorance, Idleness and Vice may sometimes be the only Ingredients for qualifying a Legislator: That Laws are best explained, interpreted, and applied by those whose Interest and Abilities lie in perverting, confounding, and eluding them. I observe among you some Lines of an Institution, which in its Original might have been tolerable, but these half erased, and the rest wholly blurred and blotted by Corruptions. It doth not appear from all you have said, how any one Virtue is required toward the procurement of any one Station among you; much less that Men were enobled on Account of their Virtue, that Priests were advanced for their Piety or Learning, Soldiers for their Conduct or Valour, Judges for their Integrity, Senators for the Love of their Country, or Counsel for their Wisdom. As for yourself, (continued the King,) who have spent the greatest Part of your Life in Travelling, I am well disposed to hope you have escaped many Vices of your Country: But by what I have gathered from your own Relation, and the Answers I have with much Pains wringed and extorted from you, I cannot but conclude the Bulk of your Natives to be the most pernicious Race of little odious Vermin that Nature ever suffered to crawl upon the Surface of the Earth.

CHAP.

CHAP. VII.

The Author's Love of his Country. He makes a Proposal of much Advantage to the King, which is rejected. The King's great Ignorance in Politicks. The Learning of that Country very imperfect. Their Laws, and military Affairs, and Parties in the State.

NOTHING but an extreme Love of Truth could have hindered me from concealing this Part of my Story. It was in vain to discover my Resentments, which were always turned into Ridicule; and I was forced to rest with Patience while my noble and most beloved Country was so injuriously treated. I am heartily sorry as any of my Readers can possibly be, that such an Occasion was given, but this Prince happened to be so curious and inquisitive upon every particular, that it could not consist either with Gratitude or good Manners to refuse giving him what Satisfaction I was able. Yet thus much I may be allowed to say in my own Vindication, That I artfully eluded many of his Questions, and gave to every Point a more favourable Turn by many Degrees than the Strictness of Truth would allow. For I have always born that laudable Partiality to my own Country, which *Dionysius Halicarnassensis* with so much Justice recommends to an Historian: I would hide the Frailties and Deformities of my Political Mother, and place her Virtues and Beauties in the most advantageous Light. This was my sincere Endeavour in those many Discourses I had with that Monarch, although it unfortunately failed of Success.

But great Allowances should be given to a King who lives wholly secluded from the rest of the World, and therefore must be altogether unacquainted with the Manners and Customs that most prevail in other Nations: The want of which Knowledge will ever produce many *Prejudices*, and a certain *narrowness of thinking*, from which we and the politer Countries of *Europe* are wholly exempted. And it would be hard, indeed, if so remote a Prince's Notions of Virtue and Vice were

to

to be offered as a Standard for all Mankind.

To confirm what I have now ſaid, and further, to ſhew the miſerable Effects of a *confined Education*, I ſhall here inſert a Paſſage which will hardly obtain Belief. In Hopes to ingratiate myſelf farther into his Majeſty's Favour, I told him of an Invention diſcovered between three and four hundred Years ago, to make a certain Powder, into an Heap of which the ſmalleſt Spark of Fire falling, would kindle the whole in a Moment, although it were as big as a Mountain, and make it all fly up in the Air together with a Noiſe and Agitation greater than Thunder. That a Quantity of this Powder rammed into a hollow Tube of Braſs or Iron, according to its Bigneſs, would drive a Ball of Iron or Lead with ſuch Violence and Speed, as nothing was able to ſuſtain its Force. That the largeſt Balls thus diſcharged, would not only deſtroy whole Ranks of an Army at once, but batter the ſtrongeſt Walls to the Ground, ſink down Ships, with a thouſand Men in each, to the Bottom of the Sea; and when linked together by a Chain, would cut through Maſts and Rigging, divide hundreds of Bodies in the Middle, and lay all waſte before them. That we often put this Powder into large hollow Balls of Iron, and diſcharged them by an Engine into ſome City we were beſieging, which would rip up the Pavements, tear the Houſes to Pieces, burſt and throw Splinters on every Side, daſhing out the Brains of all who came near. That I knew the Ingredients very well, which were cheap, and common; I underſtood the Manner of compounding them, and could direct his Workmen how to make thoſe Tubes of a Size proportionable to all other things in his Majeſty's Kingdom, and the largeſt need not be above an hundred Foot long; twenty or thirty of which Tubes, charged with the proper Quantity of Powder and Balls, would batter down the Walls of the ſtrongeſt Town in his Dominions in a few Hours, or deſtroy the whole Metropolis, if ever it ſhould pretend to diſpute his abſolute Commands. This I humbly offered to his Majeſty as a ſmall Tribute of Acknowledgement in Return of ſo many Marks that I had received of his Royal Favour and Protection.

The King was ſtruck with Horror at the Deſcription I had given of thoſe terri-

ble Engines, and the Propoſal I had made. He was amazed how ſo impotent and groveling an Inſect as I (theſe were his Expreſſions) could entertain ſuch inhuman Ideas, and in ſo familiar a Manner as to appear wholly unmoved at all the Scenes of Blood and Deſolation, which I had painted as the common Effects of thoſe deſtructive Machines, whereof he ſaid, ſome evil Genius, Enemy to Mankind, muſt have been the firſt Contriver. As for himſelf, he proteſted, that although few things delighted him ſo much as new Diſcoveries in Art or in Nature, yet he would rather loſe half his Kingdom than be privy to ſuch a Secret, which he commanded me, as I valued my Life, never to mention any more.

A ſtrange Effect of *narrow Principles* and *ſhort Views!* that a Prince poſſeſſed of every Quality which procures Veneration, Love, and Eſteem; of ſtrong Parts, great Wiſdom, and profound Learning, endued with admirable Talents for Government, and almoſt adored by his Subjects, ſhould from a *nice unneceſſary Scruple*, whereof in *Europe* we can have no Conception, let ſlip an Opportunity put into his Hands, that would have made him abſolute Maſter of the Lives, the Liberties, and the Fortunes of his People. Neither do I ſay this with the leaſt Intention to detract from the many Virtues of that excellent King, whoſe Character I am ſenſible, will on this Account, be very much leſſened in the Opinion of an *Engliſh* Reader: But I take this Defect among them to have riſen from their Ignorance, they not having hitherto reduced Politicks into a Science, as the more acute Wits of *Europe* have done. For I remember very well, in a Diſcourſe one Day with the King, when I happened to ſay there were ſeveral thouſand Books among us written upon the *Art of Government*, it gave him (directly contrary to my Intention) a very mean Opinion of our Underſtandings. He profeſſed both to abominate and deſpiſe all *Myſtery*, *Refinement*, and *Intrigue*, either in a Prince or a Miniſter. He could not tell what I meant by *Secrets of State*, where an Enemy or ſome Rival Nation were not in the Caſe. He confined the Knowledge of governing within very *narrow Bounds*, to common Senſe and Reaſon, to Juſtice and Lenity, to the ſpeedy Determination of civil and criminal Cauſes; with ſome other obvious Topicks which are not worth conſidering.

ing. And, he gave it for his Opinion, whoever could make two Ears of Corn, or two Blades of Grass to grow upon a Spot of Ground where only one grew before, would deserve better of Mankind, and do more essential Service to his Country than the whole Race of Politicians put together.

The Learning of this People is very defective, consisting only in Morality, History, Poetry, and Mathematicks, wherein they must be allowed to excell. But, the last of these is wholly applied to what may be useful in Life, to the Improvement of Agriculture and all mechanical Arts; so that among us it would be little esteemed. And as to Ideas, Entities, Abstractions and Transcendentals, I could never drive the least Conception into their Heads.

No Law of that Country must exceed in Words the Number of Letters in their Alphabet, which consists only in two and twenty. But, indeed, few of them extend even to that Length. They are expressed in the most plain and simple Terms, wherein those People are not mercurial enough to discover above one Interpretation: And to write a Comment upon any Law is a capital Crime. As to the Decision of civil Causes, or Proceedings against Criminals, their Precedents are so few, that they have little Reason to boast of any extraordinary Skill in their.

They have had the Art of Printing, as well as the *Chinese*, time out of Mind. But their Libraries are not very large; for that of the King's, which is reckoned the biggest, doth not amount to above a thousand Volumes, placed in a Gallery of twelve hundred Foot long, from whence I had Liberty to borrow what Books I pleased. The Queen's Joiner had contrived in one of *Glumdalclitch*'s Rooms a kind of wooden Machine five and twenty Foot high, formed like a standing Ladder, the Steps were each fifty Foot long: It was indeed a moveable pair of Stairs, the lowest End placed at ten Foot distance from the Wall of the Chamber. The Book I had a mind to read was put up leaning against the Wall: I first mounted to the upper Step of the Ladder, and turning my Face towards the Book, began at the Top of the Page, and so walking to the Right and the Left about eight or ten Paces, according to the Length of the Lines, 'till I had gotten a little below

the

the Level of mine Eyes, and then deſcended gradually 'till I came to the Bottom: After which I mounted again, and began the other in the ſame Manner, and ſo turned over the Leaf, which I could eaſily do with both my Hands, for it was as thick and ſtiff as a Paſteboard, and in the largeſt Folio's not above eighteen or twenty Foot long.

Their Stile is clear maſculine, and ſmooth, but not florid; for they avoid nothing more than multiplying unneceſſary Words, or uſing various Expreſſions. I have peruſed many of their Books, eſpecially thoſe in Hiſtory and Morality. Among the reſt I was much diverted with a little old Treatiſe, which always lay in *Glumdalclitch*'s Bed-Chamber, and belonged to her Governeſs, a grave elderly Gentlewoman, who dealt in Writings of Morality and Devotion. The Book treats of the Weakneſs of Human Kind, and is in little Eſteem, except among the Women and the Vulgar. However I was curious to ſee what an Author of that Country could ſay upon ſuch a Subject. This Writer went thro' all the uſual Topicks of *European* Moraliſts, ſhewing how diminutive, contemptible, and helpleſs an Animal was Man in his own Nature; how unable to defend himſelf from Inclemencies of the Air, or the Fury of wild Beaſts: How much he was excelled by one Creature in Strength, by another in Speed, by a third in Fore-ſight, by a fourth in Induſtry. He added that Nature was degenerated in theſe latter declining Ages of the World, and could now produce only ſmall abortive Births in Compariſon of thoſe in antient Times. He ſaid, it was very reaſonable to think, not only that the Species of Man were originally much larger, but alſo, that there muſt have been Giants in former Ages, which, as it is aſſerted by Hiſtory and Tradition, ſo it hath been confirmed by huge Bones and Sculls caſually dug up in ſeveral Parts of the Kingdom, far exceeding the common dwindled Race of Man in our Days. He argued, that the very Laws of Nature abſolutely required we ſhould have been made in the Beginning, of a Size more large and robuſt, not ſo liable to Deſtruction from every little Accident of a Tile falling from an Houſe, or a Stone caſt from the Hand of a Boy, or being drowned in a little Brook. From this Way of reaſoning, the Author drew ſeveral moral Applications uſeful in the Conduct of Life, but needleſs here to repeat. For my

my Part, I could not avoid reflecting how univerſally this Talent was ſpread, of drawing Lectures in Morality, or, indeed, rather Matter of Diſcontent and Repining, from the Quarrels we raiſe with Nature. And, I believe, upon a ſtrict Enquiry, thoſe Quarrels might be ſhewn as ill-grounded among us, as they are among that People.

As to their military Affairs, they boaſt that the King's Army conſiſts of an hundred and ſeventy ſix thouſand Foot, and thirty-two thouſand Horſe: If that may be called an Army which is made up of Tradeſmen in the ſeveral Cities, and Farmers in the Country, whoſe Commanders are only the Nobility and Gentry, without Pay or Reward. They are, indeed, perfect enough in their Exerciſes, and under very good Diſcipline, wherein I ſaw no great Merit; for how ſhould it be otherwiſe, where every Farmer is under the Command of his own Landlord, and every Citizen under that of the principal Men in his own City, choſen after the Manner of *Venice* by *Ballot*?

I have often ſeen the Militia of *Lorbrulgrud* drawn out to exerciſe in a great Field near the City, of twenty Miles ſquare. They were in all not above twenty-five thouſand Foot, and ſix thouſand Horſe; but it was impoſſible for me to compute their Number, conſidering the Space of Ground they took up. A Cavalier mounted on a large Steed might be about an hundred Foot high. I have ſeen this whole Body of Horſe upon a Word of Command, draw their Swords at once, and brandiſh them in the Air. Imagination can figure nothing ſo grand, ſo ſurprizing, and ſo aſtoniſhing! It looked as if ten thouſand Flaſhes of Lightning were darting at the ſame time from every Quarter of the Sky.

I was curious to know how this Prince to whoſe Dominions there is no Acceſs from any other Country, came to think of Armies, or to teach his People the Practice of military Diſcipline. But I was ſoon informed both by Converſation, and reading their Hiſtories: For, in the Courſe of many Ages they have been troubled with the ſame Diſeaſe to which ſo many Governments are ſubject; the Nobility often contending for Power, the People for Liberty, and the King for abſolute Dominion. All which, however, happily tempered by the Laws of the Kingdom, have been ſometimes violated

ted by each of the three Parties, and have once or more occasioned Civil Wars, the last whereof was happily put an End to by this Prince's Grandfather by a general Composition: And the Militia, then settled with common Consent, hath been ever since kept in the strictest Duty.

CHAP. VIII.

The King and Queen make a Progress to the Frontiers. The Author attends them. The Manner in which he leaves the Country very particularly related. He returns to England.

I Had always a strong Impulse that I should sometime recover my Liberty, though it was impossible to conjecture by what Means, or to form any Project with the least Hope of succeeding. The Ship in which I sailed was the first ever known to be driven within Sight of that Coast, and the King had given strict Orders, that if at any time another appeared, it should be taken ashore, and, with all its Crew and Passengers, brought in a a Tumbril to *Lorbrulgrud*. He was strongly bent to get me a Woman of my own Size, by whom I might propagate the Breed; but I think, I should rather have died than undergone the Disgrace of leaving a Posterity to be kept in Cages like tame Canary Birds, and perhaps, in time, sold about the Kingdom to Persons of Quality for Curiosities. I was indeed treated with much Kindness: I was the Favourite of a great King and Queen, and the Delight of the whole Court, but it was upon such a Foot as ill became the Dignity of human Kind. I could never forget those domestick Pledges I had left behind me. I wanted to be among People with whom I could converse upon even Terms, and walk about the Streets and Fields without being afraid of being trod to Death like a Frog or a young Puppy. But my Deliverance came sooner than I expected, and in a Manner, not very common: The whole Story and Circumstances of which I shall faithfully relate.

I had

I had now been two Years in this Country; and about the Beginning of the third, *Glumdalclitch* and I attended the King and Queen in a Progress to the *South* Coast of the Kingdom. I was carried, as usual, in my Travelling-Box, which as I have already described, was a very convenient Closet of twelve Foot wide. And I had ordered a Hammock to be fixed, by silken Ropes, from the four Corners at the Top, to break the Jolts, when a Servant carried me before him on Horseback, as I sometimes desired, and would often sleep in my Hammock while we were upon the Road. On the Roof of my Closet, not directly over the Middle of the Hammock, I ordered the Joiner to cut out a Hole of a Foot square to give me Air in hot Weather, as I slept; which Hole I shut, at Pleasure, with a Board that drew backwards and forwards thro' a Groove.

When we came to our Journey's End the King thought proper to pass a few Days at a Palace he hath near *Flanflasnic*, a City within eighteen *English* Miles of the Sea-side. *Glumdalclitch* and I was much fatigued: I had gotten a small Cold, but the poor Girl was so ill as to be confined to her Chamber. I longed to see the Ocean, which must be the only Scene of my Escape, if ever it should happen. I pretended to be really worse than I really was, and desired Leave to take the fresh Air of the Sea, with a Page I was very fond of, and who had sometimes been trusted with me. I shall never forget with what unwillingness *Glumdalclitch* consented, nor the strict Charge she gave the Page to be careful of me, bursting at the same time into a flood of Tears, as if she had some Foreboding of what was to happen. The Boy took me out in my Box about half an Hour's Walk from the Palace towards the Rocks on the Sea-shore. I ordered him to set me down, and lifting up one of my Sashes, cast many a wishful melancholy Look towards the Sea. I found myself not very well, and told the Page that I had a mind to take a Nap in my Hammock, which I hoped would do me good. I got in and the Boy shut the Window close down to keep out the Cold. I soon fell asleep, and all I can conjecture is, that while I slept, the Page, thinking no Danger could happen, went among the Rocks to look for Birds Eggs, having before observed him from my Window searching about and picking up one or two in the Clefts. Be that as it will, I found myself suddenly awaked

awaked with a violent Pull upon the Ring which was faſtened at the Top of my Box for the Conveniency of Carriage. I felt my Box raiſed very high in the Air, and then borne forward with prodigious Speed. The firſt Jolt had like to have ſhaken me out of my Hammock, but afterwards the Motion was eaſy enough. I called out ſeveral times, as loud as I could raiſe my Voice, but all to no purpoſe. I looked towards my Windows and could ſee nothing but the Clouds and Sky. I heard a Noiſe over my Head like the clapping of Wings, and then began to perceive the woful Condition I was in, that ſome Eagle had got the Ring of my Box in his Beak, with an Intent to let it fall on a Rock like a Tortoiſe in a Shell, and then pick out my Body, and devour it. For the Sagacity and Smell of his Bird enabled me to diſcover this Quarry at a great Diſtance, though better concealed than I could be within a two-inch Board.

In a little time I obſerved the Noiſe and ſhutter of Wings to increaſe very faſt and my Box toſſed up and down like a ſign-poſt in a windy Day. I heard ſeveral Bangs or Buffets, as I thought, given to the Eagle, (for ſuch I am certain it muſt have been that held the Ring of my Box in his Beak) and then all on a ſudden felt myſelf falling perpendicularly down for above a Minute, but with ſuch incredible Swiftneſs that I almoſt loſt my Breath. My Fall was ſtopped by a terrible Squaſh, that ſounded louder to my Ears than the Cataract of *Niagara*; after which I was quite in the Dark for another Minute, and then my Box began to riſe ſo high that I could ſee Light from the Tops of the Windows. I now perceived that I was fallen into the Sea. My Box, by the Weight of my Body, the Goods that were in, and the broad Plates of Iron fixed for Strength at the four Corners of the Top and Bottom, floated above five Foot deep in Water. I did then, and do now ſuppoſe that the Eagle which flew away with my Box was purſued by two or three others, and forced to let me drop while he was defending himſelf againſt the reſt, who hoped to ſhare in the Prey. The Plates of Iron faſtened at the Bottom of the Box, (for thoſe were the ſtrongeſt,) preſerved the Balance while it fell, and hinder'd it from being broken on the Surface of the Water. Every Joint of it was well grooved; and the Door did not move on Hinges, but

up

up and down like a Sash, which kept my Closet so tight that very little Water came in. I got with much Difficulty out of my Hammock, having first ventured to draw back the Slip-board on the Roof already mentioned, contrived on Purpose to let in Air, for want of which I found myself almost stifled.

How often did I then wish myself with my dear *Glumdalclitch*, from whom one single Hour had so far divided me! And I may say, with Truth, that in the midst of my own Misfortunes I could not forbear lamenting my poor Nurse, the Grief she would suffer for my Loss, the Displeasure of the Queen, and the Ruin of her Fortune. Perhaps many Travellers have not been under greater Difficulties and Distress than I was at this Juncture, expecting every Moment to see my Box dashed in Pieces, or at least overset by the first violent Blast, or a rising Wave. A Breach in one single Pane of Glass would have been immediate Death: Nor could any thing have preserved the Windows but the strong Lattice-wires placed on the out-side against Accidents in travelling. I saw the Water ooze in at several Crannies, although the Leaks were not considerable, and I endeavoured to stop them as well as I could. I was not able to lift up the Roof of my Closet, which otherwise I certainly should have done, and sat on the Top of it, where I might, at least, preserve myself some Hours longer than by being shut up, as I may call it, in the Hold. Or if I escaped these Dangers for a Day or two, what could I expect but a miserable Death of Cold and Hunger! I was four Hours under these Circumstances, expecting, and indeed wishing every Moment to be my last.

I have already told the Reader, that there were two strong Staples fixed upon that side of my Box which had no Window, and into which the Servant who used to carry me on horseback would put a leathern Belt, and buckle it about his Waist. Being in this disconsolate State, I heard, or at least thought I heard some kind of grating Noise on that Side of my Box where the Staples were fixed, and soon began to fancy that the Box was pulled or towed along in the Sea; for I now and then felt a sort of tugging, which made the Waves rise near the Tops of my Windows, leaving me almost in the Dark. This gave me some feint Hopes of Relief; although I was not able to imagine how it could be brought about.

I ventured to unscrew one of my Chairs, which were always fastened to the Floor; and having made a hard shift to screw it down again directly under the Board that I had lately opened, I mounted on the Chair, and putting my Mouth as near as I could to the Hole, I called for Help in a loud Voice, and in the all the Languages I understood. I then fastned my Handkerchiefto a Stick I usually carried, and thrusting it up the Hole, waved it several times in the Air, that if any Boat or Ship were near, the Seamen might conjecture that some unhappy Mortal to be shut up in this Box.

I found no Effect from all I could do, but plainly perceived my Closet to be moved along; and in the Space of an Hour, or better, that Side of the Box where the Staples were, and had no Window, struck against something that was hard. I apprehended it to be a Rock, and found myself tossed more than ever. I plainly heard a Noise upon the Cover of my Closet, like that of a Cable, and the grating of it as it passed through the Ring. I then found myself hoisted up by Degrees, at least three Foot higher than I was before. Whereupon I again thrust up my Stick and Handkerchief, calling for Help 'till I was almost hoarse. In return to which, I heard a great Shout repeated three times, giving me such Transports of Joy, as are not to be conceived but by those who feel them. I now heard a trampling over my Head, and some-body calling through the Hole with a loud Voice in the *English* Tongue, if there be any-body below, let them speak. I answer'd, I was an *Englishman*, drawn by ill Fortune into the greatest Calamity that ever any Creature underwent, and begged, by all that was moving, to be deliver'd out of the Dungeon I was in. The Voice replied, I was safe, for my Box was fastened to their Ship; and the Carpenter should immediately come and saw an Hole in the Cover large enough to pull me out. I answer'd, that was needless, and would take up too much time, for there was no more to be done, but let one of the Crew put his Finger into the Ring, and take the Box out of the Sea into the Ship, and so into the Captain's Cabbin. Some of them upon hearing me talk so wildly, thought I was mad; others laughed; for indeed it never came into my Head that I was now got among People of my own Stature and Strength the Carpenter came, and in a few Minutes

sawed

ſawed a Paſſage about four Foot ſquare, then let down a ſmall Ladder, upon which I mounted, and from thence was taken into the Ship in a very weak Condition.

The Sailors were all in Amazement, and aſked me a thouſand Queſtions, which I had no Inclination to anſwer. I was equally confounded at the Sight of of ſo many Pigmies, for ſuch I took them to be, after having ſo long accuſtomed mine Eyes to the monſtrous Objects I had left. But the Captain, Mr. *Thomas Wilcocks*, an honeſt worthy *Shropſhire* Man, obſerving I was ready to faint, took me into his Cabbin gave me a Cordial to comfort me, and made me *turn in* upon his own Bed, adviſing me to take a little Reſt, of which I had great need. Before I went to ſleep I gave him to underſtand that I had ſome valuable Furniture in my Box, too good to be loſt; a fine Hammock, an handſome Field-Bed, two Chairs, a Table, and a Cabinet. That my Cloſet was hung on all Sides, or rather quilted, with Silk and Cotton: That if he would let one of the Crew bring my Cloſet into his Cabbin, I would open it there before him, and ſhew him my Goods. The Captain hearing me utter theſe Abſurdities, concluded I was raving. However, (I ſuppoſe to pacify me,) he promiſed to give order as I deſired, and going upon Deck ſent ſome of his Men into my Cloſet, from whence (as I afterwards found) they drew up all my Goods, and ſtripp'd off the Quilting; but the Chairs, Cabinet and Bedſtead being ſcrewed to the Floor, were much damaged by the Ignorance of the Seamen, who tore them up by Force. Then they knocked off ſome of the Boards for the Uſe of the Ship, and when they had got all they had a mind for, let the Hulk drop into the Sea, which by many Breaches made in the Bottom and Sides, ſunk to right. And indeed I was glad not to have been a Spectator of the Havock they made; becauſe I am confident it would have ſenſibly touched me, by bringing former Paſſages into my Mind, which I had rather forget.

I ſlept ſome Hours, but perpetually diſturbed with Dreams of the Place I had left, and the Dangers I had eſcaped. However, upon waking I found myſelf much recovered. It was now about eight o'Clock at Night, and the Captain ordered Supper immediately, thinking I had already faſted too long. He entertained me with

with great Kindneſs, obſerving me not to look wildly, or talk inconſiſtently; and when we were left alone, deſired I would give him a Relation of my Travels, and by what Accident I came to be ſet adrift in that monſtrous wooden Cheſt. He ſaid, that about twelve o'Clock at Noon, as he was looking through his Glaſs, he eſpied it at a Diſtance, and thought it was a Sail, which he had a mind to make, being not much out of his Courſe in Hopes of buying ſome Biſket, his own beginning to fall ſhort. That upon coming nearer, and finding his Error, he ſent out his Long-Boat to diſcover what I was; that his Men came back in a Fright, ſwearing they had ſeen a Swimming-houſe. That he laughed at their Folly, and went himſelf in the Boat, ordering his Men to take a ſtrong Cable along with them. That the Weather being calm, he rowed round me ſeveral times, obſerved my Windows, and the Wire-lattices that defended them. That he diſcovered two Staples upon one Side, which was all of Boards, without any Paſſage for Light. He then commanded his Men to row up to that Side, and faſtening a Cable to one of the Staples, ordered them to tow my Cheſt (as they call it) towards the Ship. When it was there, he gave Directions to faſten another Cable to the Ring fixed in the Cover, and to raiſe up my Cheſt with Pullies, which all the Sailors were not able to do above two or three Foot. He ſaid, they ſaw my Stick and Handkerchief thruſt out of the Hole, and concluded that ſome unhappy Man muſt be ſhut up in the Cavity. I aſked, whether he or the Crew had ſeen any prodigious Birds in the Air about the time he firſt diſcovered me? To which he anſwer'd, That diſcourſing this Matter with the Sailors while I was aſleep, one of them ſaid, he had *obſerved* three Eagles flying towards the *North*, but remarked nothing of their being larger than the uſual Size; which I ſuppoſe muſt be imputed to the great height they were at; and he could not gueſs the Reaſon of my Queſtion; I then aſked the Captain, How far he reckoned we might be from Land? He ſaid, by the beſt Computation he could make, we were at leaſt an hundred Leagues. I aſſured him, that he muſt be miſtaken by almoſt half, for I had not left the Country from whence I came above two Hours before I dropt into the Sea. Whereupon he began again to think that my Brain was diſturbed, of which he gave me a Hint, and adviſed me to go to Bed in a Cabbin he had provided.

I aſſured

I assured him I was well refreshed with his good Entertainment and Company, and as much in my Senses as ever I was in my Life. He then grew serious, and desired to ask me freely whether I were not troubled in Mind by the Consciousness of some enormous Crime, for which I was punished at the Command of some Prince, by exposing me in that Chest, as great Criminals in other Countries, have been forced to Sea in a leaky Vessel without Provisions: For although he should have been sorry to have taken so ill a Man into his Ship, yet he would engage his Word to set me safe on shore in the first Port where we arrived. He added, that his Suspicions were much increased by some very absurd Speeches I had delivered at first to the Sailors, and afterwards to himself. in relation to my Closet or Chest, as well as by my odd Looks and Behaviour while I was at Supper.

I begged his Patience to hear me tell my Story, which I faithfully did from the time I left *England* to the Moment he first discovered me. And as Truth always forceth its Way into rational Minds, so this honest worthy Gentleman, who had some tincture of Learning, and very good Sense, was immediately convinced of my Candour and Veracity. But farther to confirm all I had said, I entreated him to give Order that my Cabinet should be brought, of which I had the Key in my Pocket, (for he had already informed me how the Seamen disposed of my Closet.) I opened it in his own Presence, and shewed him the small Collection of Rarities I made in the Country from whence I had been so strangely delivered. There was the Comb I had contrived out of the Stumps of the King's Beard, and another of the same Materials, but fixed into a Paring of her Majesty's Thumb-nail, which served for the Back. There was a Collection of Needles and Pins from a Foot to half a Yard long; four Wasp-stings, like Joiners Tacks; some Combings of the Queen's Hair; a gold Ring which one Day she made me a Present of in a most obliging Manner, taking it from her Little-finger, and throwing it over my Head like a Collar. I desired the Captain would please to accept this Ring, in return of his Civilities; which he absolutely refused. I shewed him a Corn that I had cut off with my own Hand, from a Maid of Honour's Toe; it was about the Bigness of a *Kentish* Pippin, and grown so hard, that

when I returned to *England*, I got it hollowed into a Cup, and ſet in Silver. Laſtly, I deſired him to ſee the Breeches I had then on, which were made of a Mouſe's Skin.

I could force nothing on him but a Foot-man's Tooth, which I obſerved him to examine with great Curioſity, and found he had a Fancy for it. He received it with abundance of Thanks more than ſuch a Trifle could deſerve. It was drawn by an unſkilful Surgeon, in a Miſtake, from one of *Glumdalclitch*'s Men, who was afflicted with the Tooth-ach, but it was as ſound as any in his Head. I got it cleaned, and put it into my Cabinet. It was about a Foot long, and four Inches in Diameter.

The Captain was very well ſatisfied with this plain Relation I had given him, and ſaid, he hoped when we returned to *England*, I would oblige the World by putting it in Paper, and making it publick. My Anſwer was, that I thought we were already over-ſtocked with Books of Travels: That nothing could now paſs which was not extraordinary; wherein I doubted ſome Authors leſs conſulted Truth than their own Vanity, or Intereſt, or the Diverſion of ignorant Readers. that my Story could contain little beſides common Events, without thoſe ornamental Deſcriptions of ſtrange Plants, Trees, Birds and other Animals, or of the barbarous Cuſtoms and Idolatry of Savage People, with which moſt Writers abound. However, I thanked him for his good Opinion, and promiſed to take the Matter into my Thoughts.

He ſaid, he wondred at one thing very much, which was, to hear me ſpeak ſo loud, aſking me whether the King or Queen of that Country were thick of Hearing. I told him, it was what I had been uſed to for above two Years paſt; and that I admired as much at the Voices of him and his Men, who ſeemed to me only to whiſper, and yet I could hear them well enough. But when I ſpoke in that Country, it was like a Man talking in the Street to another looking out from the Top of a Steeple, unleſs when I was placed on a Table, or held in any Perſon's Hand. I told him I had likewiſe obſerved another thing, that when I firſt got into the Ship, and the Sailors ſtood all about me, I thought they were the moſt little contemptible Creatures I had ever beheld. For indeed while I was in that Prince's

Prince's Country, I could never endure to look in a Glaſs after mine Eyes had been accuſtomed to ſuch prodigious Objects, becauſe the Compariſon gave me ſo deſpicable a Conceit of myſelf. The Captain ſaid, that while we were at Supper, he obſerved me to look at every Thing with a ſort of Wonder, and that I often ſeemed hardly able to contain my Laughter, which he knew not well how to take, but imputed it to ſome diſorder in my Brain. I anſwered, it was very true; and I wondred how I could forbear, when I ſaw his Diſhes of the ſize of a ſilver Threepence, a Leg of Pork hardly a Mouthful, a Cup not ſo big as a Nutſhell; and ſo I went on, deſcribing the reſt of his Houſhold-ſtuff and Proviſions after the ſame Manner. For altho' the Queen had ordered a little Equipage of all things neceſſary while I was in her Service, yet my Ideas were wholly taken up with what I ſaw on every Side of me, and winked at my own Littleneſs as People do at their own Faults. The Captain underſtood my Raillery very well, and merrily reply'd with the old *Engliſh* Proverb, That he doubted mine Eyes were bigger than my Belly, for he did not obſerve my Stomach ſo good, altho' I had faſted all Day; and continuing in his Mirth, proteſted he would have gladly given an hundred Pounds to have ſeen my Cloſet in the Eagle's Bill, and afterwards in it Fall from ſo great a Height into the Sea; which would certainly have been a moſt aſtoniſhing Object, worthy to have the Deſcription of it tranſmitted to future Ages, and the Compariſon of *Phaeton* was ſo obvious, that he could not forbear applying it, altho' I did not much admire Conceit.

The Captain having been at *Tonquin* was in his Return to *England* driven North eaſtward to the Lattitude of 44 Degrees, and of Longitude 143. But meeting a Trade Wind two Days after I came on board him, we ſailed Southward a long time, and coaſting *New-Holland* kept our Courſe Weſt-ſouth-weſt, and then South-ſouth-weſt 'till we doubled the *Cape of Good-Hope*. Our Voyage was very proſperous, but I ſhall not trouble the Reader with a Journal of it. The Captain called in at one or two Ports and ſent in his Long-boat for Proviſions and freſh Water, but I never went out of the Ship 'till we came into the *Downs*, which was on the 3*d*. Day of *June* 1706, about nine Months after my Eſcape. I offered to leave my Goods in Security for Pay-

Payment of my Freight; but the Captain protested he would not receive one Farthing. We took kind Leave of each other, and I made him promise he would come to see me at my House in *Redriff*. I hired a Horse and Guide for five Shillings, which I borrowed of the Captain.

As I was on the Road, observing the Littleness of the Houses, the Trees, the Cattle and the People, I began to think myself in *Lilliput*. I was afraid of trampling on every Traveller I met, and often called aloud to have them stand out of the Way, so that I had like to have gotten one or two broken Heads for my Impertinence.

When I came to my own House, for which I was forced to enquire, one of the Servants opening the Door, I bent down to go in (like a Goose under a Gate) for fear of striking my Head. My Wife ran out to embrace me, but I stooped lower than her Knees, thinking she could other wise never be able to reach my Mouth. My Daughter kneeled to ask me Blessing, but I could not see her till she arose, having been so long used to stand with my Head and Eyes erect to above sixty Foot; and then I went to take her up with one Hand, by the Waist. I looked down upon the Servants and one or two Friends who were in the House, as if they had been Pigmies, and I a Giant. I told my Wife she had been too thrifty, for I found she had starved herself and her Daughter to nothing. In short, I behaved myself so unaccountably, that they were all of the Captain's Opinion when he first saw me, and concluded I had lost my Wits. This I mention as an Instance of the great Power of Habit and Prejudice.

In a little time I and my Family and Friends came to a right Understanding: But my Wife protested I should never go to Sea any more; altho' my evil Destiny so ordered that she had not Power to hinder me, as the Reader may know hereafter. In the mean time I here conclude the second Part of my unfortunate Voyages.

The End of the Second Part.

TRAVELS.

TRAVELS.

PART III.

A Voyage to LAPUTA, BALNIBARBI, LUGGNAGG, GLUBBDUBDRIBB, and JAPAN.

CHAP. I.

The Author ſets out on his third Voyage; is taken by Pyrates. The Malice of a Dutchman. *His Arrival at an Iſland. He is received into* Laputa.

I Had not been at home above ten Days, when Captain *William Robinſon*, a *Corniſh* Man, Commander of the *Hopewell*, a ſtout Ship, of three hundred Tuns, came to my Houſe. I had formerly been Surgeon of another Ship where he was Maſter, and a fourth Part Owner, in a Voyage to the *Levant*: He had always treated me more like a Brother than an inferior Officer, and hearing of my Arrival, made me a Viſit, as I ap-

prehended only out of Friendſhip, for nothing paſſed more than what is uſual after long Abſences. But repeated his Viſits often, expreſſing his Joy to find me in good Health, aſking whether I were now ſettled for Life, adding that he intended a Voyage to the *Eaſt-Indies*, in two Months: At laſt he plainly invited me, though with ſome Apologies, to be Surgeon of the Ship; that I ſhould have another Surgeon under me beſides our two Mates, that my Sallary ſhould be double to the uſual Pay; and that having experienced my Knowledge in Sea-Affairs to be at leaſt equal to his, he would enter into any Engagement to follow my Advice, as much as if I had Share in the Command.

He ſaid ſo many obliging Things, and and I knew him to be ſo honeſt a Man, that I could not reject his Propoſal; the Thirſt I had of ſeeing the World, notwithſtanding my paſt Misfortunes, continuing as violent as ever. The only Difficulty that remained, was to perſuade my Wife, whoſe Conſent, however, I at laſt obtained, by the Proſpect of Advantage ſhe propoſed to her Children.

We ſet out the *5th* Day of *Auguſt*, 1706. and arrived at Fort *St. George* the *11th* of *April* 1707. ſtayed there three Weeks to refreſh our Crew, many of whom were ſick. From thence we went to *Tonquin*, where the Captain reſolved to continue ſome time, becauſe many of the Goods he intended to buy were not ready, nor could he expect to be diſpatched in ſome Months. Therefore in Hopes to defray ſome of the Charges he muſt be at, he bought a Sloop, loaded with ſeveral Sorts of Goods, wherewith the *Tonquineſe* uſually trade to the neighbouring Iſlands; and putting fourteen Men on board, whereof three were of the Country, he appointed me Maſter of the Sloop, and gave me Power to traffick for two Months, while we tranſacted his Affairs at *Tonquin*.

We had not ſailed above three Days, when a great Storm ariſing, we were driven five Days to the North-North-Eaſt, and then to the Eaſt; after which we had fair Weather, but ſtill with a pretty ſtrong Gale from the Weſt. Upon the tenth Day we were chaſed by two Pyrates, who ſoon overtook us; for my Sloop was ſo deep loaden, that ſhe ſailed very ſlow, neither were we in a Condition to defend ourſelves.

We

We were boarded about the ſame Time by both the Pyrates, who enter'd furiously at the Head of their Men, but finding us all proſtrate upon our Faces, (for ſo I gave order,) they pinioned us with ſtrong Ropes, and ſetting a Guard upon us, went to ſearch the Sloop.

I obſerved among them a *Dutchman*, who ſeemed to be of ſome Authority, though he was not Commander of either Ship. He knew us by our Countenances to be *Engliſhmen*, and jabbering to us in his own Language, ſwore we ſhould be tied Back to Back, and thrown into the Sea. I ſpoke *Dutch* tolerably well; I told him who we were, and begged him, in conſideration of our being Chriſtians and Proteſtants, of neighbouring Countries, in ſtrict Alliance, that he would move the Captain to take ſome Pity on us. This inflamed his Rage; he repeated his Threatnings, and turning to his Companions, ſpoke with great Vehemence, in the *Japaneſe* Language, as I ſuppoſe often uſing the Word *Chriſtianos*.

The largeſt of the two Pyrate Ships was commanded by a *Japaneſe* Captain, who ſpoke a little *Dutch*, but very imperfectly. He came up to me, and after ſeveral Queſtions, which I anſwered in great Humility, he ſaid we ſhould not die. I made the Captain a very low Bow, and then turning to the *Dutchman*, ſaid, I was ſorry to find more Mercy in a Heathen, than in a Brother, Chriſtian. But I had ſoon Reaſon to repent thoſe fooliſh Words, for that malicious Reprobate, having often endeavoured, in vain, to perſuade both the Captains that might be thrown into the Sea, (which they would not yield to after the Promiſe made me, that I ſhould not die) however prevailed ſo far as to have a Puniſhment inflicted on me, worſe in all human Appearance than Death itſelf. My Men were ſent by an equal Diviſion into both the Pirate-Ships, and my Sloop new manned. As to myſelf, it was determined that I ſhould be ſet a-drift in a ſmall Canoe, with Paddles and a Sail, and four Days Proviſions, which laſt the *Japaneſe* Captain was ſo kind to double out of his own Stores, and would permit no Man to ſearch me. I got down into the Canoe, while the *Dutchman* ſtanding upon the Deck, loaded me with all the Curſes and injurous Terms his Langauge could afford.

About an Hour before we ſaw the Pyrates,

rates, I had taken an Obſervation, and found we were in the Latitude of 46 N. and of Longitude 183. When I was at ſome Diſtance from the Pyrates, I diſcovered by my Pocket-Glaſs ſeveral Iſlands to the South-Eaſt. I ſet up my Sail; the Wind being fair, with a Deſign to reach the neareſt of thoſe Iſlands, which I made a ſhift to do in about three Hours. It was all rocky; however, I got many Birds Eggs, and ſtriking Fire I kindled ſome Heath and dry Sea-Weed, by which I roaſted my Eggs. I eat no other Supper, being reſolved to ſpare my Proviſions as much as I could. I paſſed the Night under the Shelter of a Rock, ſtrewing ſome Heath under me, and ſlept pretty well.

The next Day I ſailed to another Iſland, and thence to a third or fourth, ſometimes uſing my Sail, and ſometimes my Paddles. But not to trouble the Reader with a particular Account of my Diſtreſſes, let it ſuffice, that on the fifth Day I arrived at the laſt Iſland in my Sight, which lay South-ſouth Eaſt to the former.

This Iſland was at a greater Diſtance than I expected, and I did not reach it in leſs than five Hours. I encompaſſed it almoſt round before I could find a convenient Place to land in, which was a ſmall Creek, about three Times the Wideneſs of my Canoe. I found the Iſland to be all rocky, only a little intermingled with Tufts of Graſs and ſweet ſmelling Herbs. I took out my ſmall Proviſions, and after having refreſhed myſelf, I ſecured the Remainder in a Cave, whereof there were great Numbers. I gathered plenty of Eggs upon the Rocks, and got a Quantity of dry Sea-Weed and parched Graſs, which I deſigned to kindle the next Day, and roaſt my Eggs as well as I could. (For I had about me my Flint, Steel, Match and Burning-Glaſs.) I lay all Night in the Cave where I had lodged my Proviſions. My Bed was the ſame dry Graſs and Sea-Weed which I intended for Fewel. I ſlept very little, for the Diſquiets of my Mind prevailed over my Wearineſs, and kept me awake. I conſidered how impoſſible it was to preſerve my Life in ſo deſolate a Place, and how miſerable my End muſt be. Yet I found myſelf ſo liſtleſs and diſponding, that I had not the Heart to riſe; and before I could get Spirits enough to creep out of my Cave, the Day was far advanced. I walked a while among the Rocks; the Sky was perfectly

perfectly clear, and the Sun so hot, that I was forced to turn my Face from it: When all on a sudden it became obscured as I thought, in a Manner very different from what happens by the Interposition of a Cloud. I turned back, and perceived a vast opake Body between me and the Sun, moving forwards towards the Island: It seemed to be about two Miles high, and hid the Sun six or seven Minutes; but I did not observe the Air to be much colder, or the Sky more darkned, than if I had stood under the Shade of a Mountain. As it approached nearer over the Place where I was, it appeared to be a firm Substance, the Bottom flat, smooth, and shinning very bright from the Reflection of the Sea below. I stood upon a Height about two hundred Yards from the Shore, and saw this vast Body descending almost to a Parallel with me, at less than an *English* Mile distance. I took out my Pocket-Perspective, and could plainly discover Numbers of People moving up and down the Sides of it, which appeared to be sloping; but what those People were doing, I was not able to distinguish.

The natural Love of Life gave me some inward Motions of Joy, and I was ready to entertain a Hope, that this Adventure might some Way or other help to deliver me from the desolate Place I was in. But at the same Time the Reader can hardly conceive my Astonishment, to behold an Island in the Air, inhabited by Men, who were able, as it should seem) to raise, or sink, or put it into a progressive Motion as they pleased. But not being at that time in a Disposition to philosophize upon this Phænomenon, I rather chose to observe what Course the Island would take, because it seemed for a while to stand still. Yet soon after it advanced nearer, and I could see the Sides of it encompassed with several Gradations of Galleries and Stairs, at certain Intervals, to descend from one to the other. In the lowest Gallery I beheld some People fishing with long Angling-Rods, and others looking on. I waved my Cap, (for my Hat was long since worn out) and my Handkerchief towards the Island; and upon its nearer Approach, I called and shouted with the utmost Strength of my Voice: And then looking circumspectly, I beheld a Croud gathered to that Side which was most in my View. I found by their pointing towards me, and to each other, that they plainly discovered me, although they

made no Return to my Shouting. But I could ſee four or five Men running in great Haſte up the Stairs to the Top of the Iſland, who then diſappeared. I happened rightly to conjecture, that theſe were ſent for Orders to ſome Perſon in Authority upon this Occaſion.

The Number of People increaſed, and in leſs than half an Hour the Iſland was moved and raiſed in ſuch a Manner, that the loweſt Gallery appeared in a Parallel of leſs than an hundred Yards diſtance from the Height where I ſtood. I then put myſelf into the moſt ſupplicating Poſtures, and ſpoke in the humbleſt Accent, but received no Anſwer. Thoſe who ſtood neareſt over-againſt me, ſeemed to be Perſons of Diſtinction, as I ſuppoſed by their Habit. They conferred earneſtly with each other, looking often upon me. At length one of them called out in a clear, polite, ſmooth Dialect, not unlike in ſound to the *Italian*; and therefore I returned an Anſwer in that Language, hoping at leaſt that the Cadence might be more agreeable to his Ears. Although neither of us underſtood the other, yet my Meaning was eaſily known, for the People ſaw the Diſtreſs I was in.

They made Signs for me to come down from the Rock, and go towards the Shoar, which I accordingly did; and the flying Iſland being raiſed to a convenient Height, the Verge directly over me, a Chain was let down from the loweſt Gallery, with a Seat faſten'd to the Bottom to which I fixed myſelf, and was drawn up by Pullies.

CHAP.

CHAP. II.

The Humours and Diſpoſitions of the Laputians *deſcribed. An Account of their Learning. Of the King and his Court. The Author's Reception there. The Inhabitants ſubject to Fears and Diſquietudes. An Account of the Women.*

AT my alighting I was ſurrounded by a Croud of People; but thoſe who ſtood neareſt, ſeemed to be of better Quality. They beheld me with all the Marks and Circumſtances of Wonder; neither, indeed, was I much in their debt, having never, 'till then, ſeen a Race of Mortals ſo ſingular in their Shapes, Habits, and Countenances. Their Heads were all reclined to the Right, or the Left; one of the Eyes turned inward, and the other directly up to the Zenith. Their outward Garments were adorned with the Figures of Suns, Moons, and Stars, interwoven with thoſe of Fiddles, Flutes, Harps, Trumpets, Guittars, Harpſicords, and many more Inſtruments of Muſick, unknown to us in *Europe*. I obſerved here and there many in the Habit of Servants, with a blown Bladder faſtened like a Flail to the End of a ſhort Stick, which they carried in their Hands. In each Bladder was a ſmall Quantity of dried Peaſe, or little Pebbles, (as I was afterwards informed.) With theſe Bladders they now and then flapped the Mouths and Ears of them who ſtood near them, of which Practice I could not then conceive the Meaning: It ſeems the Minds of theſe People are ſo taken up with Intenſe Speculations, that they neither can ſpeak, nor attend to the Diſcourſes of others, without being rouzed by ſome external Action upon the Organs of Speech and Hearing; for which Reaſon, thoſe Perſons who are able to afford it always keep a *Flapper* (the Original is *Climenole*) in their Family as one of their Domeſticks, nor ever walk abroad, or make Viſits without him. And the Buſineſs of this Officer is, when two or three more Perſons are in Company, gently to ſtrike with his Bladder the Mouth of him who is to ſpeak, and the Right Ear of him or them to whom the Speaker addreſſeth himſelf. This *Flapper* is likewiſe

likewiſe employed diligently to attend his Maſter in his Walks, and, upon Occaſion to give him a ſoft Flap on his Eyes, becauſe he is always ſo wrapped up in Cogitation, that he is in manifeſt Danger of falling down every Precipice, and bouncing his Head againſt every Poſt, and in the Streets of juſtling others, or being juſtled himſelf into the Kennel.

It was neceſſary to give the Reader this Information, without which he would be at the ſame Loſs with me, to underſtand the Proceedings of theſe People, as they conducted me up Stairs, to the Top of the Iſland, and from thence to the Royal Palace. While we were aſcending, they forgot ſeveral times what they were about, and left me to myſelf, 'till their Memories were again rouzed by their *Flappers*; for they appeared altogether unmoved by the Sight of my foreign Habit and Countenance, and by the Shouts of the Vulgar, whoſe Thoughts and Minds were more diſengaged.

At laſt we enter'd the Palace, and proceeded into the Chamber of Preſence, where I ſaw the King ſeated on his Throne, attended on each ſide by Perſons of Prime Quality. Before the Throne, was a large Table filled with Globes and Spheres, and Mathematical Inſtruments of all Kinds. His Majeſty took not the leaſt Notice of us, although our Entrance was not without ſufficient Noiſe by the Concourſe of all Perſons belonging to the Court. But he was then deep in a Problem, and we attended at leaſt an Hour before he could ſolve it. There ſtood by him, on each ſide, a young Page, with Flaps in their Hands, and when they ſaw he was at leiſure, one of them gently ſtruck his Mouth, and the other his Right Ear; at which he ſtarted like one awaked on the ſudden, and looking towards me, and the Company I was in, recollected the Occaſion of our coming, whereof he had been inform'd before. He ſpoke ſome Words, whereupon immediately a young Man with a Flap came up to my Side, and flapt me gently on the Right Ear; but I made Signs, as well as I could, that I had no Occaſion for ſuch an Inſtrument; which as I afterwards found, gave his Majeſty and the whole Court a very mean Opinion of my Underſtanding. The King, as far as I could conjecture, aſked me ſeveral Queſtions, and I addreſſed myſelf to him in all the Languages I had. When it was found, that I could neither underſtand, nor be underſtood, I

was

was conducted, by the King's Order, to an Apartment in his Palace, (this Prince being diſtinguiſhed above all his Predeceſſors for his Hoſpitality to Strangers) where two Servants were appointed to attend me. My Dinner was brought, and four Perſons of Quality, whom I remember'd to have ſeen pretty near the King's Perſon, did me the Honour to dine with me. We had two Courſes of three Diſhes each, in the firſt Courſe there was a Shoulder of Mutton, cut into an Æquilateral Triangle, a Piece of Beef into a Rhomboides, and a Pudding into a Cycloid. The ſecond Courſe was two Ducks truſſed up into the Form of Fiddles, Sauſages and Puddings, reſembling Flutes and Hautbois, and a Breaſt of Veal in the Shape of a Harp. The Servants cut our Bread into Cones, Cylinders, Parallelograms, and ſeveral other mathematical Figures.

While we were at Dinner, I made bold to aſk the Names of ſeveral Things in their Language; and thoſe noble Perſons, by the Aſſiſtance of their *Flappers*, delighted to give me Anſwers, hoping to raiſe my Admiration of their great Abilities, if I could be brought to converſe with them. I was ſoon able to call for Bread and Drink, or whatever elſe I wanted.

After Dinner my Company withdrew, and a Perſon was ſent by the King's Order, attended by a *Flapper*. He brought with him Pen, Ink, and Paper, and three or four Books, giving me to underſtand by Signs, that he was ſent to teach me the Language. We ſat together four Hours, in which Time I wrote down a great Number of Words in Columns, with the Tranſlation over-againſt them. I likewiſe made a ſhift to learn ſeveral ſhort Sentences. For my Tutor would order one of my Servants to fetch ſomething, or turn about, to make a Bow, to ſit, or ſtand, or walk, and the like. Then I took down the the Sentence in Writing. He ſhewed me alſo in one of his Books, the Figures of the Sun, Moon, and Stars, the Zodiack, the Topics, and Polar Circles, together with the Denominations of many Figures of Planes and Solids. He gave me the Names and Deſcriptions of all the muſical Inſtruments, and the general Terms of Art in playing on each of them. After he had left me, I placed all my Words with their Interpretations, in Alphabetical Order. And thus in a few Days, by the Help of a very faithful Memory, I got ſome Inſight into their Language.

The Word, which I interpret the *Flying* or *Floating Island*, is in the original *Laputa*, whereof I could never learn the true Etymology. *Lap* in the old obsolete Language, signifieth *High*, and *Untuh* a Governor, from which, they say, by Corruption, was derived *Laputa* from *Lapuntuh*. But I do not approve of this Derivation, which seems to be a little strained. I ventured to offer to the Learned among them a Conjecture of my own, that *Laputa* was *quasi Lap outed*, *Lap* signifying properly the dancing of the Sun-Beams in the Sea, and *outed* a Wing; which, however, I shall not obtrude, but submit to the judicious Reader.

Those to whom the King had entrusted me, observing how ill I was clad, ordered a Taylor to come next Morning, and take my Measure for a Suit of Cloaths. This Operator did his Office after a different Manner from those in *Europe*. He first took my Altitude by a Quadrant, and then with Rule and Compasses, described the Dimensions and Out-lines of my whole Body, all which he enter'd upon Paper, and in six Days brought my Cloaths very ill made, and quite out of Shape, by happening to mistake a Figure in the Calculation. But my Comfort was, that I observed such Accidents very frequent, and little regarded.

During my Confinement for want of Cloaths, and by an Indisposition that held me some Days longer, I much enlarged my Dictionary; and when I went next to Court, was able to understand many Things the King spoke, and to return him some kind of Answers. His Majesty had given Orders that the Island should move North-East and by East, to the Vertical Point over *Lagado*, the Metropolis of the whole Kingdom below upon the firm Earth. It was about ninety Leagues distant, and our Voyage lasted four Days and a half. I was not in the least sensibly of the progressive Motion made in the Air by the Island. On the second Morning, about eleven o'Clock the King himself in Person, attended by his Nobility, Courtiers and Officers, having prepared all their musical Instruments, played on them for three Hours without Intermission, so that I was quite stunned with the Noise; neither could I possibly guess the Meaning 'till my Tutor informed me. He said that the People of the Island had their Ears adapted to hear the Musick of the Spheres, which always played

played at certain Periods, and the Court was now prepared to bear their Part, in whatever Inſtrument they moſt excelled.

In our Journey to *Lagado* the Capital City, his Majeſty ordered that the Iſland ſhould ſtop over certain Towns and Villages, from whence he might receive the Petitions of his Subjects, and to this Purpoſe ſeveral Packthreads were let down with ſmall Weights at the Bottom. On theſe Packthreads the People ſtrung their Petitions, which mounted up directly like the Scraps of Paper faſtened by School-Boys at the End of the String that holds their Kite. Sometimes we received Wine and Victuals from below, which were drawn up by Pullies.

The Knowledge I had in Mathematicks gave me great Aſſiſtance in acquiring their Pharſeology which depended much upon that Science and Muſick; and in the latter I was not unſkilled. Their Ideas are perpetually converſant in Lines and Figures. If they would, for Example, praiſe the Beauty of a Woman, or any other Animal, they deſcribe it by Rhombs Circles, Parallelograms, Ellipſes, and other Geometrical Terms, or by Words of Art drawn from Muſick, needleſs hear to repeat. I obſerved in the King's Kitchen, all Sorts of mathematical and muſical Inſtruments, after the Figures of which they cut up the Joints that were ſerved to his Majeſty's Table.

Their Houſes are very ill built, the Walls bevil, without one right Angle in any Appartment; and this Defect ariſeth from the Contempt they bear to practical Geometry, which they deſpiſe, as Vulgar and Mechanick, thoſe Inſtructions they give being too refined for the Intellectuals of their Work-men, which occaſions perpetual Miſtakes. And although they are dexterous enough upon a Piece of Paper in the Management of the Rule, the Pencil, and the Divider, yet in the common Actions and Behaviour of Life, I have not ſeen a more clumſy awkard and unhandy People, nor ſo ſlow and perplexed in their Conception upon all other Subjects, except thoſe of Mathematicks and Muſick. They are very bad Reaſoners, and vehemently given to Opoſition, unleſs when they happen to be in the right Oppinion, which is ſeldom their Caſe. Imagination, Fancy and Invention, they are wholly Strangers to, nor have any Words in their Language by which thoſe Ideas can be expreſſed; the whole Compaſs of their Thoughts

Thoughts and Mind being ſhut up within the fore-mentioned Sciences.

Moſt of them, eſpecially thoſe who deal in the aſtronomical Part, have great Faith in judicial Aſtrology, altho' they are aſhamed to own it publickly. But what I chiefly admired, and thought altogether unaccountable, was the ſtrong Diſpoſition I obſerved in them towards News and Politicks, perpetually enquiring into Publick Affairs, giving their Judgments in Matters of State, and paſſionately diſputing every Inch of a Party Opinion. I have indeed obſerved the ſame Diſpoſition among moſt of the Mathematicians. I have known in *Europe*, although I could never diſcover the leaſt Analogy between the two Sciences; unleſs thoſe People ſuppoſe, that becauſe the ſmalleſt Circle hath as many Degrees as the largeſt, therefore the Regulation and Management of the World require no more Abilities than the handling and turning of a Globe. But, I rather take this Quality to ſpring from a very common Infirmity of human Nature, inclining us to be more curious and conceited in Matters, where we have the leaſt Concern, and for which we are leaſt adapted either by Study or Nature.

Theſe People are under continual Diſquietudes, never enjoying a Minute's Peace of Mind; and their Diſturbances proceed from Cauſes which very little affect the reſt of Mortals. Their Apprehenſions ariſe from ſeveral Changes they dread in the celeſtial Bodies. For Inſtance, that the Earth, by the continual Approaches of the Sun towards it, muſt in Courſe of Time be abſorbed or ſwallowed up: That the Face of the Sun will, by Degrees, be encruſted with its own Effluvia, and give no more Light to the World: That the Earth very narrowly eſcaped a Bruſh from the Tail of the laſt Comet, which would have infallibly reduced it to Aſhes; and that the next, which they have calculated for one and thirty Years hence, will propably deſtroy us. For, if in its Perihelion it ſhould approach within a certain Degree of the Sun, (as by their Calculations, they have Reaſon to dread) it will conceive a Degree of Heat ten thouſand times more intenſe than that of red hot glowing Iron; and in his Abſence from the Sun, carry a Blazing Tail, ten hundred thouſand and fourteen Miles long; through which if the Earth ſhould paſs at the Diſtance of one hundred thouſand Miles from the *Nucleus* or main Body of the Comet, it muſt in its

Paſſage

Paſſage be ſet on Fire, and reduced to Aſhes: That the Sun daily ſpending its Rays without any Nutriment to ſupply them, will at laſt be wholly conſumed and annihilated, which muſt be attended with the Deſtruction of this Earth, and of all the Planets that receive their Light from it.

They are ſo perpetually alarmed with the Apprehenſions of theſe and the like impending Dangers, that they can neither ſleep quietly in their Beds, nor have any Reliſh for the common Pleaſures or Amuſements of Life. When they meet an Acquaintance in the Morning, the firſt Queſtion is about the Sun's Health, how he looked at his ſetting and riſing, and what Hopes they have to avoid the Stroke of the approaching Comet. This Converſation they are apt to run into with the ſame Temper that Boys diſcover, in delighting to hear terrible Stories of Spirits and Hobgoblins, which they greedily liſten to, and dare not go to Bed for Fear.

The Women of the Iſland have abundance of Vivacity; they contemn their Huſbands, and are exceedingly fond of Strangers, whereof there is always a conſiderable Number from the Continent below, attending at Court, either upon Affairs of the ſeveral Towns and Corporations, or their own particular Occaſions, but are much deſpiſed, becauſe they want the ſame Endowments. Among theſe the Ladies chuſe their Gallants: But the Vexation is, that they act with too much Eaſe and Security; for the Huſband is always ſo wrapt in Speculation, that the Miſtreſs and Lover may proceed to the greateſt Familiarities before his Face, if he be but provided with Paper and Implements and without his Flapper at his Side.

The Wives and Daughters lament their Confinement to the Iſland, although I think it the moſt delicious Spot of Ground in the World; and altho' they live here in the greateſt Plenty and Magnificence, and are allowed to do whatever they pleaſe, they long to ſee the World, and take the Diverſions of the Metropolis, which they are not allowed to do without a particular Licence from the King; and this is not eaſy to be obtained, becauſe the People of Quality have found by frequent Experience how hard it is to perſuade their Women to return from below. I was told that a great Court-Lady, who had

ſeveral Children, is married to the prime Miniſter, the richeſt Subject in the Kingdom, a very graceful Perſon, extremely fond of her, and lives in the fineſt Palace of the Iſland, went down to *Lagado*, on the Pretence of Health, there hid herſelf for ſeveral Months, 'till the King ſent a Warrant to ſearch for her, and ſhe was was found in an obſcure Eating-Houſe all in Rags, having pawned her Cloaths to maintain an old deformed Footman, who beat her every Day, and in whoſe Company ſhe was taken much againſt her Will. And altho' her Huſband received her with all poſſible Kindneſs, and without the leaſt Reproach, ſhe ſoon after contrived to ſteal down again, with all her Jewels, to the ſame Gallant, and hath not been heard of ſince.

This may, perhaps, paſs with the Reader rather for an *European* or *Engliſh* Story, than for one of a Country ſo remote: But he may pleaſe to conſider, that the Caprices of Womankind are not limited by any Climate or Nation, and that they are much more uniform than can be eaſily imagined.

In about a Month's Time I had made a tolerable Proficience in their Language, and was able to anſwer moſt of the King's Queſtions, when I had the Honour to attend him. His Majeſty diſcovered not the leaſt Curioſity to enquire into the Laws, Government, Hiſtory, Religion, or Manners of the Countries where I had been, but confined his Queſtions to the State of Mathematicks, and received the Account I gave him, with great Contempt and Indifference, tho' often rouzed by his *Flapper* on each ſide.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

A Phænomenon solved by modern Philosophy and Astronomy. The Laputians *great Improvements in the latter. The King's Method of suppressing Insurrections.*

I Desired Leave of this Prince to see the Curiosities of the Island, which he was graciously pleased to grant, and order'd my Tutor to attend me. I chiefly wanted to know to what Cause in Art or in Nature, it owed its several Motions, whereof I will now give a Philosophical Account to the Reader.

The flying, or floating Island, is exactly circular, its Diameter 7837 Yards, or about four Miles and an half, and consequently contains ten thousand Acres. It is three hundred Yards thick. The Bottom or Under-Surface, which appears to those who view it from below, is one even regular Plate of Adamant, shooting up to the Height of about two hundred Yards. Above it lie the several Minerals in their usual Order, and over all is a Coat of rich Mould ten or twelve Foot deep. This Declivity of the upper Surface, from the Circumference to the Center, is the natural Cause why all the Dews and Rains which fall upon the Island, are conveyed in small Rivulets towards the Middle, where they are emptied into four large Basons each of about half a Mile in Circuit, and two hundred Yards distant from the Center. From these Basons the Water is continually exhaled by the Sun in the Day-time, which effectually prevents their overflowing. Besides, as it is in the Power of the Monarch to raise the Island above the Region of Clouds and Vapours, he can prevent the falling of Dews and Rains whenever he pleases: For the highest Clouds cannot rise above two Miles as Naturalists agree, at least they were never known to do in that Country.

At the Center of the Island there is a Chasm about fifty Yards in Diameter, from whence the Astronomers descend into a large Dome, which is therefore called *Flandona Gāgnole*, or the *Astronomers Cave*, situated at the Depth of a hundred Yards beneath the upward Surface of the Adamant. In this Cave are twenty Lamps

Lamps continually burning, which from the Reflection of the Adamant caſt a ſtrong Light into every Part. The Place is ſtored with great Variety of Sextants, Quadrants, Telleſcopes, Aſtrolabes, and other aſtronomical Inſtruments. But the greateſt Curioſity, upon which the Fate of the Iſland depends, is a Load-ſtone of a prodigious Size, in Shape reſembling a Weaver's Shuttle, in Length ſix Yards, and in the thickeſt Part at leaſt three Yards over. This Magnet is ſuſtained by a very ſtrong Axle of Adamant paſſing through its Middle, upon which it plays, and is poized ſo exactly, that the weakeſt Hand can turn it. It is hooped round with an hollow Cylinder of Adamant, four Foot deep, as many thick, and twelve Yards in Diameter, placed horizontally, and ſupported by eight Adamantine Feet, each ſix Yards high. In the Middle of the concave Side there is a Groove twelve Inches deep, in which the Extremities of the Axle are lodged, and turned round as there is Occaſion.

The Stone cannot be moved from its Place by any Force, becauſe the Hoop and its Feet are one continued Piece with that Body of Adamant, which conſtitutes the Bottom of the Iſland.

By Means of this Load-ſtone, the Iſland is made to riſe and fall, and move from one Place to another. For, with Reſpect to that Part of the Earth over which the Monarch preſides, the Stone is endued at one of its Side with an attractive Power, and at the other with a repulſive. Upon placing the Magnet erect with its attracting End towards the Earth, the Iſland deſcends; but when the repelling Extremity points downwards, the Iſland mounts directly upwards. When the Poſition of the Stone is oblique, the Motion of the Iſland is ſo too, for in this Magnet the Forces always act in Lines parallel to its Direction:

By this oblique Motion the Iſland is conveyed to different Parts of the Monarch's Dominions. To explain the Manner of its Progreſs, let *A B* repreſent a Line drawn croſs the Dominions of *Balnibarbi*, let the Line *c d* repreſent the Load-ſtone, of which let *d* be the repelling End, and *c* the attracting End; the Iſland being over *C*, let the Stone be placed in the Poſition *c d*, with its repelling End downwards, then the Iſland will be driven upwards obliquely towards *D*. When it is arrived at *D*, let the

the Stone be turned upon its Axel 'till its attracting End points towards *E*, and then the Iſland will be carried obliquely towards *E*, where, if the Stone be again turned upon its Axel 'till it ſtands in the Poſition *E F*, with its repelling Point downwards, the Iſland will riſe obliquely towards *F*; where, by directing the attracting End towards *G*, the Iſland may be carried to *G*, and from *G* to *H*, by turning the Stone, ſo as to make its repelling Extremity point directly downwards. And thus by changing the Situation of the Stone as often as there is Occaſion, the Iſland is made to riſe and fall by turns in an oblique Direction; and by thoſe alternate Riſings and Fallings (the Obliquity being not conſiderable) is conveyed from one Part of the Dominions to the other.

But it muſt be obſerved, that this Iſland cannot move beyond the Extent of the Dominions below, nor can it riſe above the Height of four Miles. For which the Aſtronomers (who have written large Syſtems concerning the Stone) aſſign the following Reaſon; That the magnetick Virtue does not extend beyond the Diſtance of four Miles, and that the Mineral which acts upon the Stone in the Bowels of the Earth, and in the Sea about ſix Leagues diſtant from the Shoar, is not diffuſed through the whole Globe but terminated with the Limits of the King's Dominions; and it was eaſy, from the great Advantage of ſuch a ſuperior Situation, for a Prince to bring under his Obedience whatever Country lay within the Attraction of that Magnet.

When the Stone is put parallel to the Plane of the Horizon, the Iſland ſtandeth ſtill; for in that Caſe the Extremities of it being at equal Diſtance from the Earth, act with equal Force; the one in drawing downwards, the other in puſhing upwards, and conſequently no Motion can enſue.

This Load-ſtone is under the Care of certain Aſtronomers. who from Time to Time give it ſuch Poſitions as the Monarch directs. They ſpend the greateſt part of their Lives in obſerving the celeſtial Bodies, which they do by the Aſſiſtance of Glaſſes far excelling ours in Goodneſs. For this Advantage hath enabled them to extend the Diſcoveries much farther than our Aſtronomers in *Europe*: for they made a Catalogue of ten thou-

ſand fixed Stars; whereas the largeſt of ours do not contain above one third Part of that Number. They have likewiſe diſcovered two leſſer Stars, or *Satellites*, which revolve about *Mars*, whereof the innermoſt is diſtant from the Center of the primary Planet exactly three of his Diameters, and the outermoſt five; the former revolves in the Space of ten Hours, and the latter in twenty one and an a half: So that the Squares of their periodical Times are very near in the ſame Proportion with the Cubes of their Diſtance from the Center of *Mars*; which evidently ſhews them to be governed by the ſame Law of Gravitation, that influences the other heavenly Bodies.

They have obſerved ninety three different Comets, and ſettled their Periods with great Exactneſs. If this be true, (and they affirm it with great Confidence) it is much to be wiſhed that their Obſervations were made publick, whereby the Theory of Comets, which at preſent is very lame and defective, might be brought to the ſame Perfection with other Parts of Aſtronomy.

The King would be the moſt abſolute Prince in the Univerſe, if he could but prevail on a Miniſtry to join with him; but theſe have their Eſtates below on the Continent, and conſidering that the Office of a Favourite hath a very uncertain Tenure, would never conſent to the enſlaving their Country.

If any Town ſhould engage in Rebellion or Mutiny, fall into violent Factions, or refuſe to pay the uſual Tribute, the King hath two Methods of reducing them to Obedience. The firſt and the Middleſt Courſe is by keeping the Iſland hovering over ſuch a Town, and the Lands about it, whereby he can deprive them of the Benefit of the Sun and the Rain, and conſequently afflict the Inhabitants with Death and Diſeaſes. And if the Crime deſerve it, they are at the ſame Time pelted from above with great Stones, againſt which they have no Defence but by creeping into Cellars or Caves, while the Roofs of their Houſes are beaten to Pieces. But if they ſtill continue obſtinate or offer to raiſe Inſurrections, he proceeds to the laſt Remedy, by letting the Iſland drop directly upon their Heads, which makes a univerſal Deſtruction both of Houſes and Men. However, this is an Extremity to which the Prince is ſeldom driven, neither indeed

deed is he willing to put it in Execution, nor dare his Miniſters adviſe him to an Action, which, as it would render them odious to the People, ſo it would be a great Damage to their own Eſtates, which lie all below, for the Iſland is the King's Demeſn.

But there is ſtill indeed a more weighty Reaſon, why the Kings of this Country have been always averſe from executing ſo terrible an Action, unleſs upon the utmoſt Neceſſity. For if the Town intended to be deſtroyed ſhould have in it any tall Rocks, as it generally falls out in the larger Cities, a Situation probably choſen at firſt with a View to prevent ſuch a Cataſtrophe; or if it abound in high Spires, or Pillars of Stone, a ſudden Fall might endanger the Bottom or Under-ſurface of the Iſland; which, although it conſiſts, as I have ſaid, of one entire adamant two hundred Yards thick, might happen to crack by too great a Choque, or burſt by approaching too near the Fires from the Houſes below, as the Backs both of Iron and Stone will often do in our Chimneys. Of all this the People are well apprized, and underſtand how far to carry their Obſtancy, where their Liberty or Property is concerned. And the King, when he is higheſt provoked, and moſt determined to preſs a City to Rubbiſh, orders the Iſland to deſcend with great Gentleneſs, out of a Pretence of Tenderneſs to his People, but indeed for fear of breaking the Adamantine Bottom; in which Caſe, it is the Opinion of all their Philoſophers, that the Load-ſtone could no longer hold it up, and the whole Maſs would fall to the Ground.

By a fundamental Law of this Realm, neither the King, nor either of his two elder Sons are permitted to leave the Iſland; nor the Queen 'till ſhe is paſt Child-bearing.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The Author leaves Laputa, *is conveyed to* Balnibarbi, *arrives at the Metropolis. A Deſcription of the Metropolis, and the Country adjoining. The Author hoſpitably received by a great Lord. His Converſation with that Lord.*

ALTHO' I cannot ſay that I was ill-treated in this Iſland, yet I muſt confeſs I thought myſelf too much neglected, not without ſome Degree of Contempt. For neither Prince nor People appeared to be curious in any Part of Knowledge, except Mathematicks and Muſick, wherein I was far their inferior, and upon that Account very little regarded.

On the other ſide, after having ſeen all the Curioſities of the Iſland, I was very deſirous to leave it, being heartily weary of thoſe People. They were indeed excellent for two Sciences for which I have great Eſteem, and wherein I am not unverſed; but at the ſame time ſo abſtracted and involved in Speculation, that I never met with ſuch diſagreeable Companions. I convers'd only with Women, Tradeſmen, *Flappers* and Court-Pages, during two Months of my Abode here, by which, at laſt, I render'd myſelf extremely contemptible; yet theſe were the only People from whom I could ever receive a reaſonable Anſwer.

I had obtained, by hard Study, a good degree of Knowledge in their Language; I was weary of being confined to an Iſland where I received ſo little Countenance, and reſolved to leave it with the firſt Opportunity.

There was a great Lord at Court, nearly related to the King, and for that Reaſon alone uſed with Reſpect. He was univerſally reckoned the moſt ignorant and ſtupid Perſon among them. He had performed many eminent Services for the Crown, had great natural and acquired Parts, adorned with Integrity and Honour, but ſo ill an Ear for Muſick, that his Detractors reported he had been often known to beat time in the wrong Place; neither could his Tutors, without extreme Difficulty, teach him

him to demonstrate the most easy Proposition in the Mathematicks. He was pleased to shew me many Marks of Favour, often did me the Honour of a Visit, desired to be informed in the Affairs of *Europe*, the Laws and Customs, the Manners and Learning, of the several Countries where I had travelled. He listened to me with great Attention, and made very wise Observations on all I spoke. He had two *Flappers* attending him for State, but never made use of them, except at Court, and in Visits of Ceremony, and would always command them to withdraw when we were alone together.

I intreated this illustrious Person to intercede in my Behalf with his Majesty for Leave to depart; which he accordingly did, as he was pleased to tell me, with Regret: For, indeed he had made me several Offers very Advantageous, which, however, I refused with Expressions of the highest Acknowledgement.

On the 16*th* Day of *February* I took Leave of his Majesty and the Court. The King made me a Present to the Value of about two hundred Pounds *English*, and my Protector his Kinsman as much more, together with a Letter of Recommendation to a Friend of his in *Lagado*, the Metropolis: The Island being then hovering over a Mountain about two Miles from it, I was let down from the lowest Gallery in the same manner as I had been taken up.

The Continent, as far as it is subject to the Monarch of the *Flying Island*, passes under the Name of *Balnibarbi*, and the Metropolis, as I said before, is called *Lagado*. I felt some little Satisfaction in finding myself on firm Ground. I walked to the City without any Concern, being clad like one of the Natives, and sufficiently instructed to converse with them. I soon found out the Person's House to whom I was recommended, presented my Letter from his Friend the Grandee in the Island and was received with much Kindness. This great Lord, whose Name was *Munodi*, ordered me an Apartment in his own House, where I continued during my Stay, and was entertained in a most hospitable Manner.

The next Morning after my Arrival, he took me in his Chariot to see the Town, which is about half the bigness of *London*, but the Houses very strangely built, and

most of them out of Repair. The People in the Streets walked fast, looked wild, their Eyes fixed, and were generally in Rags. We passed thro' one of the Town-Gates, and went about three Miles into the Country, where I saw many Labourers working with several sorts of Tools in the Ground, but was not able to conjecture what they were about; neither did I observe any Expectation either of Corn or Grass, although the Soil appeared to be excellent. I could not forbear admiring at these odd Appearances both in Town and Country, and I made bold to desire my Conductor that he would be pleased to explain to me what could be meant by so many busy Heads, Hands, and Faces, both in the Streets and the Fields, because I did not discover any good Effects they produced; but on the contrary, I never knew a Soil so unhappily cultivated, Houses so ill contrived, and so ruinous, or People whose countenances and Habit expressed so much Misery and Want.

This Lord *Munodi* was a Person of the first Rank, and had been some Years Governor of *Lagado*; but by a Cabal of Ministers was discharged for Insufficiency. However, the King treated him with Tenderness, as a well meaning Man, but of a low contemptible Understanding.

When I gave that free Censure of the Country, and its Inhabitants, he made no further Answer than by telling me, that I had not been long enough among them to form a Judgment; and that the different Nations of the World had different Customs, with other common Topicks to the same Purpose. But when we returned to his Palace, he asked me how I liked the Building, what Absurdities I observed, and what Quarrel I had with the Dress and Looks of his Domesticks. This he might safely do, because every thing about him was very magnificent, regular and polite: I answered, that his Excellency's Prudence, Quality and Fortune, had exempted him from those Defects which Folly and Beggary had produced in others. He said, if I would go with him to his Country House about twenty Miles distant, where his Estate lay, there would be more Leisure for this kind of Conversation. I told his Excellency, that I was entirely at his Disposal; and accordingly we set out the next Morning.

During

During our Journey, he made me obſerve the ſeveral Methods uſed by Farmers in managing their Lands, which to me were wholly unaccountable; for except in ſome very few Places, I could not diſcover one Ear of Corn or Blade of Graſs. But, in three Hours travelling, the Scene was wholly altered; we came into a moſt beautiful Country; Farmers Houſes at ſmall diſtances, neatly built; the Fields encloſed, containing Vineyards, Corn-grounds and Meadows. Neither do I remember to have ſeen a more delightful Proſpect. His Excellency obſerved my Countenance to clear up; he told me, with a Sigh, that there his Eſtate began, and would continue the ſame 'till we ſhould come to his Houſe; that his Countrymen ridicul'd and deſpis'd him for managing his Affairs no better, and for ſetting ſo ill an Example to the Kingdom, which however was followed by very few, ſuch as were old, and wilful, and weak, like himſelf.

We came at length to the Houſe; which was indeed a noble Structure, built according to the beſt Rule of ancient Architecture. The Fountains, Gardens, Walks, Avenues, and Groves, were all diſpoſed with exact Judgment and Taſte. I gave due Praiſes to every thing I ſaw: Whereof his Excellency took not the leaſt Notice 'till after Supper, when, there being no third Companion, he told me, with a very melancholly Air, that he doubted he muſt throw down his Houſes in Town and Counrry, to rebuild them after the preſent Mode, deſtroy all his Plantations, and caſt others in ſuch a Form as modern Uſage required, and give the ſame Directions to all his Tenants, unleſs he would ſubmit to incur the Cenſure of Pride, Singularity, Affectation, Ignorance, Caprice, and perhaps increaſe his Majeſty's Diſpleaſure.

That the Admiration I appeared to be under, would ceaſe or diminiſh, when he had informed me of ſome Particulars, which probably, I never heard of at Court; the People there being too much taken up in their own Speculations, to have Regard to what paſſed here below.

The Sum of his Diſcourſe was to this Effect: That about forty Years ago certain Perſons went up to *Lagado*, either upon Buſineſs or Diverſion, and af-

ter

ter five Months Continuance, came back with a very little Smattering in Mathematicks, but full of volatile Spirits acquiring in that airy Region. That these Persons upon their Return began to dislike the Management of every thing below, and fell into Schemes of putting all Arts, Sciences, Languages, and Mechanicks upon a new Foot. To this End, they procured a Royal Patent for erecting an Academy of PROJECTORS in *Lagado*; and the Humour prevailed so strongly among the People, that there is not a Town of any Consequence in the Kingdom without such an Academy. In these Colleges, the Professors contrive new Rules and Methods of Agriculture and Building, and new Instruments and Tools for all Trades and Manufactures; whereby, as they undertake, one Man shall do the Work of ten; a Palace may be built in a Week, of Materials so durable, as to last for ever, without repairing; all the Fruits of the Earth shall come to Maturity at whatsoever Season we think fit to chuse, and increase an hundred fold more than they do at Present, with innumerable other happy Proposals. The only Inconvenience is that none of these Projects are yet brought to Perfection, and in the mean time the whole Country lies miserably waste, the Houses in Ruins, and the People without Food or Cloaths. By all which, instead of being discouraged, they are fifty times more violently bent upon prosecuting their Schemes, driven equally on by Hope and Despair: That as for himself, being not of an enterprizing Spirit, he was content to go on in the old Forms, to live in the Houses his Ancestors had built, and act as they did in every Part of Life without Innovation: That, some few other Persons of Quality and Gentry had done the same, but were looked on with an Eye of Contempt and ill Will, as Enemies to Art, ignorant and ill Common-wealthsmen, preferring their own Ease and Sloth before the general Improvement of their Country.

His Lordship added, that he would not by any further Particulars prevent the Pleasure I should certainly take in viewing the Grand Acamedy, whither he was resolved I should go. He only desired me to observe a ruined Building upon the Side of a Mountain about three Miles distant, of which he gave me this Account: That he had a very convenient Mill within half a Mile of his House, turned by a Current from a large River,

and

and sufficient for his own Family, as well as great a Number of his Tenants: That, above seven Years ago, a Club of those Projectors came to him with Proposals to destroy this Bill, and built another on the Side of that Mountain, on the long Ridge whereof a long Canal must be cut for a Repository of Water, to be conveyed up by Pipes and Engines to supply the Mill: Because the Wind and Air upon a Height agitated the Water, and thereby made it fitter for Motion; and because the Water descending down a Declivity, would turn the Mill with half the Current of a River whose Course is more upon a Level. He said, that being then not very well with the Court, and pressed by many of his Friends, he complied with the Proposal; and after employing an hundred Men for two Years the Work miscarryed, the Projectors went off, laying the Blame entirely upon him, railing at him ever since, and puting others upon the same Experiment, with equal assurance of Success, as well as equal Disappointment.

In a few Days we came back to Town, and his Excellency, considering the bad Character he had in the Acamedy, would not go with me himself, but recommended me to a Friend of his to bear me Company thither. My Lord was pleased to represent me as a great Admirer of Projects, and a Person of much Curiosity and easy Belief; which, indeed, was not without Truth, for I had myself been a sort of Projector in my younger Days.

CHAP. V.

The Author permitted to see the Grand Academy of Lagado. *The Academy largely described. The Arts wherein the Professors employ themselves.*

THIS Academy is not an entire single Building, but a Continuation of several Houses on both Sides of a Street, which growing waste, was purchased and applied to that Use.

I was received very kindly by the Warden, and went for many Days to the Acamedy. Every Room hath in it one or more Projectors, and I believe I could not be in fewer than five hundred Rooms.

The first Man I saw was of a meager Aſpect, with ſooty Hands and Face, his Hair and Beard long, ragged and ſinged in ſeveral Places: His Cloaths, Shirt, and Skin, were all of the ſame Colour. He had been eight Years upon a Project for extracting Sun-Beams out of Cucumbers, which were to be put into Vials hermetically ſealed, and let out to warm the Air in raw inclement Summers. He told me he did not doubt in eight Years more, he ſhould be able to ſupply the Governor's Gardens with Sunſhine at a reaſonable Rate; but he complained that his Stock was low, and intreated me to give him ſomething as an Encouragement to Ingenuity, eſpecially ſince this had been a very dear Seaſon for Cucumbers. I made him a ſmall Preſent, for my Lord had furniſhed me with Money on Purpoſe, becauſe he knew their Practice of begging from all who go to ſee them.

I went into another Chamber, but was ready to haſten back, being almoſt overcome with a horrible Stink. My Conductor preſſed me forward, conjuring me, in a Whiſper, to give no Offence, which would be highly reſented, and therefore I durſt not ſo much as ſtop my Noſe. The Projector of this Cell was the moſt ancient Student of the Acamedy: His Face and Beard were of a pale yellow; his Hands and Cloaths dawbed over with Filth. When I was preſented to him, he gave me a very cloſe Embrace, (a Compliment I could well have excuſed.) His Employment from his firſt coming into the Academy, was an Operation to reduce human Excrement to its Original Food, by ſeparating the ſeveral Parts, removing the Tincture which it receives from the Gall, making the Odour exhale and ſcumming off the Salvia. He had a weekly Allowance from the Society, of a Veſſel filled with human Ordure, about the Bigneſs of a *Briſtol* Barrel.

I ſaw another at work to calcine Ice into Gun-Powder, who likewiſe ſhewed me a Treatiſe he had written concerning the Maleability of Fire, which he intended to publiſh.

There

There was a moſt ingenious Architect, who had contrived a new Method for building Houſes, by beginning at the Roof and working downwards to the Foundation, which he juſtified to me by the like Practice of thoſe two prudent Inſects the Bee and the Spider.

There was a Man born blind, who had ſeveral Apprentices in his own Condition: Their Employment was to mix Colours for Painters, which their Maſter taught them to diſtinguiſh by feeling and ſmelling. It was indeed my Misfortune to find them at that time not very perfect in their Leſſons, and the Profeſſor himſelf happen'd to be generally miſtaken: This Artiſt is much encouraged and eſteemed by the whole Fraternity.

In another Apartment I was highly pleaſed with a Projector, who had found a Device of Plowing the Ground with Hogs, to ſave the Charges of Plows, Cattle and Labour. The Method is this: In an Acre of Ground you bury at ſix Inches diſtance, and eight deep, a Quantity of Acorns, Dates, Cheſnuts, and other Maſs or Vegetables, whereof theſe Animals are fondeſt: Then you drive ſix hundred or more of them into the Field, where in a few Days they will root up the whole Ground in ſearch of their Food, and make it fit for ſowing, at the ſame Time manuring it with their Dung. It is true, upon Experiment they found the Charge and Trouble very great, and they had little or no Crop: However, it is not doubted that this Invention may be capable of great Improvement.

I went into another Room, where the Walls and Cieling were all hung round with Cobwebs, except a narrow Paſſage for the Artiſt to go in and out. At my Entrance he called aloud to me not to diſturb his Webs. He lamented the fatal Miſtake the World had been ſo long in, of uſing Silk-worms, while we had ſuch plenty of domeſtick Inſects, who infinitely excelled the former, becauſe they underſtood how to weave as well as Spin. And he propoſed farther, that by employing Spiders, the Charge of dying Silks ſhould be wholly ſaved, whereof I was fully convinced, when he ſhewed me a vaſt Number of Flies moſt beautifully coloured, wherewith he fed his Spiders, aſſuring us, that the Webs would take a Tincture from them; and as he had them of all Hues, he hoped to fit every-body's Fancy, as ſoon

as

as he could find proper Food for the Flies of certain Gums, Oils, and other glutinous Matter, to give a Strength and Conſiſtence to the Threads.

There was an Aſtronomer who had undertaken to place a Sun-Dial upon the great Weather-cock on the Town-Houſe, by adjuſting the annual and diural Motions of the Earth and Sun, ſo as to anſwer and coincide with all accidental Turnings by the Wind.

I was complaining of a ſmall Fit of the Cholick, upon which my Conductor led me into a Room, where a great Phyſician reſided, who was famous for curing that Diſeaſe by contrary Operations from the ſame Inſtrument. He had a large Pair of Belows, with a long ſlender Muzzle of Ivory. This he conveyed eight Inches up the Anus, and drawing in the Wind, he affirmed he could make the Guts as lank as a dried Bladder. But when the Diſeaſe was more ſtubborn and violent, he let in the Muzzle, while the Bellows were full of Wind, which he diſcharged into the Body of the Patient, then withdrew the Inſtrument to repleniſh it, clapping his Thumb ſtrongly againſt the Orifice of the Fundament; and this being repeated three or four times, the adventitious Wind would ruſh out, bringing the noxious along with it (like Water into a Pump) and the Patient recover. I ſaw him try both Experiments, upon a Dog, but could not diſcern any Effect from the former. After the latter, the Animal was ready to burſt, and made ſo violent a Diſchage, as was very offenfive to me and my Companions. The Dog died on the Spot, and we left the Doctor endeavouring to recover him by the ſame Operation.

I viſited many other Apartments, but ſhall not trouble my Reader with all the Curioſities I obſerved, being ſtudious of Brevity.

I had hitherto ſeen only one ſide of the Acamedy, the other being appropriated to the Advancers of ſpeculative Learning, of whom I ſhall ſay ſomething when I have mentioned one illuſtrious Perſon more, who is called among *them the univerſal Artiſt*. He told us, he had been thirty Years employing his Thoughts for the Improvement of human Life. He had two large Rooms full of wonderful Curioſities, and fifty Men at work. Some were condenſing Air into a dry tangible Subſtance,

Substance, by extracting the Nitre, and letting the aqueous or fluid Particles percolate; others softning Marble for Pillows and Pincushions, others petrifying the Hoofs of a living Horse to preserve them from foundering. The Artist himself was at that time busy upon two great Designs; the first to sow Land with Chaff, wherein he affirmed the true seminal Virtue to be contained, as he demonstrated by several Experiments, which I was not skilful enough to comprehend. The other was, by a certain composition of Gums, Minerals, and Vegetables outwardly applied, to prevent the Growth of Wool upon two young Lambs; and he hoped in a reasonable Time to propagate the Breed of naked Sheep all over the Kingdom.

We crossed a Walk to the other Part of the Academy, where as I have already said, the Projector in speculative Learning resided.

The first Professor I saw was in a very large Room with forty Pupils about him. After Salutation, observing me to look earnestly upon a Frame, which took up the greatest Part of both the Length and Breadth of the Room, he said, perhaps I might wonder to see him employed in a Project for improving speculative Knowledge by practical and mechanical Operations. But the World would soon be sensible of its Usefulness, and he flatter'd himself that a more noble exalted Thought never sprung in any other Man's Head. Every one knew how laborious the usual Method is of attaining to Arts and Sciences; whereas by his Contrivance, the most ignorant Person at a reasonable Charge, and with a little bodily Labour, may write both in Philosophy, Poetry, Politicks, Law, Mathematicks and Theology, without the least Assistance from Genius or Study. He then led me to the Frame, about the Sides whereof all his Pupils stood in Ranks. It was twenty Foot square, placed in the Middle of the Room. The Superficies was composed of several bits of Wood about the Bigness of a Dye, but some larger than others. They were all linked together by slender Wires. These bits of Wood were covered on every Square with Papers pasted on them, and on these Papers were written all the Words of their Language in their several Moods, Tenses, and Declensions, but without any Order. The Professor then desired me to observe, for he was going to set his

Engine at Work. The Pupils at his command took each of them hold of an Iron Handle, whereof there were forty fixed round the Edges of the Frame; and giving them a ſudden turn, the whole Diſpoſition of the Words was entirely changed. He then commanded ſix and thirty of the Lads to read the ſeveral Lines ſoftly as they appeared upon the Frame; and where they found three or four Words together that might make part of a Sentence, they dictated to the four remaining Boys who were Scribes. This Work was repeated three or four times and at every Turn the Engine was ſo contrived, that the Words ſhifted into new Places, or the Square bits of Wood moved upſide down.

Six Hours a-day the young Students were employed in this Labour, and the Profeſſor ſhewed me ſeveral Volumes in large Folio already collected, of broken Sentences, which he intended to piece together, and out of thoſe rich Materials to give the World a compleat Body of all Arts and Sciences; which, however, might be ſtill improved, and much expedited, if the publick would raiſe a Fund for making and employing five hundred ſuch Frames in *Lagado*, and oblige the Managers to contribute in common their ſeveral Collections.

He aſſured me that this Invention had employed all his Thoughts from his Youth, that he had employed the whole Vocabulary into his Frame, and made the ſtricteſt Computation of the general Proportion there is in the Book, between the Numbers of Particles, Nouns, and Verbs, and other Parts of Speech.

I made my humbleſt Acknowledgment to this illuſtrious Perſon for his great Communicativeneſs, and promiſed if ever I had the good Fortune to return to my native Country, that I would do him Juſtice, as the ſole Inventor of this wonderful Machine; the form and Contrivance of which I deſired leave to delineate upon Paper. I told him, altho' it were the Cuſtom of our Learned in *Europe* to ſteal Inventions from each other, who had thereby at leaſt this Advantage, that it became a Controverſy which was the right Owner, yet I would take ſuch Caution, that he ſhould have the Honour entire without a Rival.

We next went to the School of Language, where three Profeſſors ſat in Conſultation

ſultation upon improving that of their own Country.

The firſt Project was to ſhorten Diſcourſe, by cutting Poly Syllables into one, and leaving out Verbs and Participles, becauſe in Reality all things imaginable are but Nouns.

The other was a Scheme for entirely aboliſhing all Words whatſoever; and this was urged as a great Advantage in point of Health as well as Brevity. For it is plain, that every Word we ſpeak is in ſome Degree a Diminution of our Lungs by Corroſion, and conſequently contributes to the ſhortning of our Lives. An Expedient was therefore offered, that ſince Words are only Names for *Things*, it would be more convenient for all Men to carry about them ſuch *Things* as were neceſſary to expreſs the particular Buſineſs they are to diſcourſe on. And this Invention would certainly have taken place, to the great Eaſe as well as Health of the Subject, if the Women in conjunction with the Vulgar and Illiterate had not threatned to raiſe a Rebellion, unleſs they might be allowed the Liberty to ſpeak with their Tongues, after the Manner of their Anceſtors; ſuch conſtant irreconcileable Enemies to Science are the common People. However, many of the moſt learned and wiſe adhere to the new Scheme of expreſſing themſelves by *Things*, which hath only this Inconvenience attending it, that if a Man's Buſineſs be very great, and of various kinds, he muſt be obliged in proportion to carry a great Bundle of *Things* upon his Back, unleſs he can afford one or two ſtrong Servants to attend him. I have often beheld two of thoſe Sages almoſt ſinking under the Weight of their Packs, like Pedlars among us; who, when they met in the Streets, would lay down their Loads, open their Saddles, and hold Converſation for an Hour together; then put up their Implements, help each other to reſume their Burdens, and take their Leave.

But for ſhort Converſation, a Man may carry Implements in his Pockets and under his Arms, enough to ſupply him, and in his Houſe he cannot be at a loſs: Therefore the Room where Company meet, who practiſe this Art, is full of all *Things* ready at Hand, requiſite to furniſh Matter of this kind of artificial Converſe.

Another

Another great Advantage propoſed by this Invention, was, that it would ſerve as an univerſal Language to be underſtood in all civilized Nations, whoſe Goods and Utenſils are generally of the ſame kind, or near reſembling, ſo that their Uſes might eaſily be comprehended. And the Embaſſadors would be qualified to treat with foreign Princes or Miniſters of State, to whoſe Tongues they were utter Strangers.

I was at the Mathematical School, where the Maſter taught his Pupils after a Method ſcarce imaginable to us in *Europe*. The Propoſition and Demonſtration were fairly written on a thin Wafer, with Ink compoſed of a cephalick Tincture. This the Student was to ſwallow upon a faſting Stomach, and for three Days following eat nothing but Bread and Water. As the Wafer digeſted, the Tincture mounted to his Brain, bearing the Propoſition along with it. But the Succeſs hath not hitherto been anſwerable, partly by ſome Error in the *Quantum* or Compoſition, and partly by the Perverſeneſs of Lads, to whom this Bolus is ſo nauſeous, that they general ſteal aſide, and diſcharge it upwards before it can operate; neither have they been yet perſuaded to uſe ſo long an Abſtinence as the Preſcription requires.

CHAP. VI.

A farther Account of the Academy. The Author propoſes ſome Improvements which are honourably received.

IN the School of Political Projectors I was but ill entertained, the Profeſſors appearing, in my Judgment, wholly out of their Senſes, which is a Scene that never fails to make me melancholy. Theſe unhappy People were propoſing Schemes for perſuading Monarchs to chuſe Favourites upon the Score of their Wiſdom, Capacity and Virtue; of teaching Miniſters to conſult the publick Good; of rewarding Merit, great Abilities, and eminent Services; of inſtructing Princes to know their

their true Intereſt, by placing it on the ſame Foundation with that of their People: Of chuſing for Employments Perſons qualified to exerciſe them, with many other wild impoſſible Chimæras, that never entred before into the heart of Man to conceive, and confirmed in me the old Obſervation, that there is nothing ſo extravagant and irrational which ſome Philoſophers have not maintained for Truth.

But, however, I ſhall ſo far do Juſtice to this Part of the Academy, as to acknowledge that all of them were not ſo viſionary. There was a moſt ingenious Doctor who ſeemed to be perfectly verſed in the whole Nature and Syſtem of Government. This illuſtrious Perſon had very uſefully employ'd his Studies in finding out effectual Remedies for all Diſeaſes and Corruptions, to which the ſeveral kinds of publick Adminiſtration are ſubject by the Vices or Infirmities of thoſe who govern, as well as by the Licentiouſneſs of thoſe who are to obey. For Inſtance; whereas all Writers and Reaſoners have agreed, that there is a ſtrict univerſal Reſemblance between the Natural and the political Body; Can there be any thing more evident, than that the Health of both muſt be preſerved, and the Diſeaſes cured by the ſame Preſcription? It is allowed that Senates and great Councils are often troubled with redundant, ebullient, and other peccant Humours, with many Diſeaſes of the Head and more of the Heart; with ſtrong Convulſions, with grievous Contractions of the Nerves and Sinews in both Hands, but eſpecially the Right; with Spleen, Flatus, Vertigos and Deliriums; with ſcrophulous Tumors full of fœtid purulent Matter; with ſower frothy Ructations, with Canine Appetites and Crudeneſs of Digeſtion, beſides many others needleſs to mention. This Doctor therefore propoſed, that upon the meeting of a Senate, certain Phyſicians ſhould attend at the three firſt Days of their ſitting; and at the Cloſe of each Day's Debate feel the Pulſe of every Senator; after which, having maturely conſider'd and conſulted upon the Nature of the ſeveral Maladies, and the Method of Cure, they ſhould on the fourth Day return to the Senate-Houſe, attended by their Apothecaries, ſtored with proper Medicines; and before the Members fate, adminiſter to each of them Lenitives, Aperitives, Abſterſives, Corroſives, Reſtringments, Palliatives, Laxatives, Cephalalgicks, Ictericks, Apophlegmaticks,

Acouſticks, as their ſeveral Caſes required; and according as theſe Medicines ſhould operate, repeat, alter, or omit them at the next Meeting.

This Project could not be of any great Expence to the Publick, and would, in my poor Opinion, be of much Uſe for the Diſpatch of Buſineſs in thoſe Countries where Senates have any Share in the Legiſlative Power, beget Unanimity, ſhorten Debates, open a few Mouths which are now cloſed, and cloſe many more which are now open; curb the Petulancy of the Young, and correct the Poſitiveneſs of the Old; rouſe the Stupid, and damp the Pert.

Again, becauſe it is a general Complaint that the Favourites of Princes are troubled with ſhort and weak Memories; the ſame Doctor propoſed, that whoever attended a Firſt Miniſter, after having told his Buſineſs with the utmoſt Brevity, and in the plaineſt Words, ſhould at his Departure give the ſaid Miniſter a Tweak by the Noſe, or a Kick in the Belly, or tread on his Corns, or lug him thrice by both Ears, or run a Pin into his Breech, or pinch his Arm black and blue, to prevent Forgetfulneſs; and at every Levée Day repeat the ſame Operation, 'till the Buſineſs were done or abſolutely refus'd.

He likewiſe directed, that every Senator in the great Council of a Nation, after he had delivered his Opinion, and argued in the Defence of it, ſhould be obliged to give his Vote directly contrary; becauſe if that were done, the Reſult would infallibly terminate in the Good of the Publick.

When Parties in a State are violent, he offered a wonderful Contrivance to reconcile them. The Method is this: You take an hundred Leaders of each Party, you diſpoſe of them into Couples of ſuch whoſe Heads are neareſt of a Size; then let two nice Operators ſaw off the *Occiput* of each Couple at the ſame time in ſuch a Manner that the Brain may be equally divided. Let the *Occiputs* thus cut off be interchanged, applying each to the Head of his oppoſite Party-Man. It ſeems indeed to be a Work that requireth ſome Exactneſs, but the Profeſſor aſſured us, that if it were dextrouſly performed, the Cure would be infallible. For he argued thus; that the two half Brains being left to debate the Matter between themſelves within

within the Space of one Scull, would ſoon come to a good Underſtanding, and produce that Moderation as well as Regularity of Thinking, ſo much to be wiſh'd for in the Heads of thoſe, who imagine they come into the World only to watch and govern its Motion: And as to the Difference of Brains in Quantity or Quality, among thoſe who are Directors in faſhion, the Doctor aſſured us from his own Knowledge, that it was a perfect Trifle.

I heard a very warm Debate between two Profeſſors, about the moſt commodious and effectual Ways and Means of raiſing Money without grieving the Subject. The firſt affirmed the juſteſt Method would be to lay a certain Tax upon Vices and Folly, and the Sum fixed upon every Man, to be rated after the faireſt Manner by a Jury of his Neighbours. The ſecond was of Opinion directly contrary, to tax thoſe Qualities of Body and Mind for which Men chiefly value themſelvs, the Rate to be more or leſs according to the Degees of excelling, the Deciſion whereof ſhould be left entirely to their own Breaſt. The higheſt Tax was upon Men, who are the greateſt Favourites of the other Sex, and the Aſſeſſments according to the Number and Natures of the Favours they have received; for which they are allowed to be their own Vouchers. Wit, Valour, and Politeneſs were likewiſe propoſed to be largely taxed, and collected in the ſame Manner, by every Perſon's giving his own Word for the Quantum of what he poſſeſſed. But as to Honour, Juſtice, Wiſdom and Learning, they ſhould not be taxed at all, becauſe they are Qualifications of ſo ſingular a kind, that no Man will either allow them in his Neighbour, or value them in himſelf.

The Women were propoſed to be taxed according to their Beauty and Skill in dreſſing, wherein they had the ſame Privilege with the Men, to be determined by their own Judgment. But Conſtancy, Chaſtity, good Senſe, and good Nature, were not rated, becauſe they would not bear the Charge of Collecting.

To keep Senators in the Intereſt of the Crown, it was propoſed that the Members ſhould raffle for Employments, every Man firſt taking an Oath and giving Security that he would vote for the Court, whether he won or no, after which the Loſers had in their Turn the Liberty of

of raffling upon the next Vacancy. Thus Hope and Expectation would be kept alive, none would complain of broken Promiſes, but impute their Diſappointments wholly to Fortune, whoſe Shoulders are broader and ſtronger than thoſe of a Miniſtry.

Another Profeſſor ſhewed me a large Paper of Inſtructions for diſcovering Plots and Conſpiracies againſt the Governments. He adviſed great Stateſmen to examine into the Diet of all ſuſpected Perſons; their Times of eating; upon which Side they lay in Bed; with which Hand they wiped their Poſteriors; take a ſtrict View of their Excrements, and from the Colour, the Odour, the Taſte, the Conſiſtence, the Crudeneſs, or Maturity of Digeſtion, form a Judgment of their Thoughts and Deſigns: Becauſe Men are never ſo ſerious, thoughtful, and intent, as when they are at Stool, which he found by frequent Experiments. For in ſuch Conjunctures, when he uſed meerly as a Trial to conſider which was the beſt Way of murdering the King, his Ordure would have a Tincture of Green, but quite different when he thought only of raiſing an Inſurrection or burning the Metropolis.

The whole Diſcourſe was written with great Acuteneſs, containing many Obſervations both curious and uſeful for Politicians, but as I conceived not altogether compleat. This I ventured to tell the Author, and offered if he pleaſed to ſupply him with ſome Additions. He received my Propoſition with more Compliance than is uſual among Writers, eſpecially thoſe of the projecting Species, profeſſing he would be glad to receive farther Information.

I told him, that ſhould I happen to live in a Kingdom where Plots and Conſpiracies were either in Vogue from the Turbulency of the meaner People, or could be turned to the Uſe and Service of the higher Rank of them, I firſt would take Care to cheriſh and encourage the Breed of Diſcoveries, Witneſſes, Informers, Accuſers, Proſecutors, Evidences, Swearers, together with their ſeveral ſubſervient and Subaltern Inſtruments; and when I had got a competent Number of them of all Sorts and Capacities, I would put them under the Colour and Conduct of ſome dextrous Perſons in ſufficient Power both to protect and reward them. Men thus qualified, and thus empowered, might make

a moſt

a most excellent Use and Advantage of Plots; they might raise their own Characters, and past for most profound Politicians; they might restore new Vigour to a crazy Administration; they might stifle or divert general Discontents; fill their Pockets with Forfeitures; and advance or sink the Opinion of publick Credit, as either might answer their private Advantage. This might be done by first agreeing and settling among themselves what suspected Persons should be accused of a Plot. Then effectual Care is taken to secure all their Letters and Papers, and put the Criminal in safe and secure Custody. These Papers might be deliver'd to a Set of Artists, of Dexterity sufficient to find out the mysterious Meanings of Words, Syllables, and Letters. They should be allowed to put what Interpretation they pleased upon them, giving them a Sense not only which has no relation at all to to them, but even what is quite contray to their true Intent and real Meaning; thus, for Instance, they may, if they so fancy, interpret a *Sieve* to signify a *Court Lady*, a *lame Dog* an *Invader*, the *Plague* a *standing Army*, a *Buzzard* a *great Statesman*, the *Gout* a *High-Priest*, a *Chamber-pot* a *Committee of Grandees*, a *Broom* a *Revolution*, a *Mouse-trap* an *Employment*, a *Bottomless-pit* a *Treasury*, a *Sink* a *Court*, a *Cap and Bells* a *Favourite*, a *Broken Reed* a *Court of Justice*, an *empty Tun* a *General*, a *running Sore* an *Administration*.

But should this Method fail, Recourse might be had to others more effectual, by learned Men called Acrosticks and Anagrams. First, might be found Men of Skill and Penetration who can discern that all initial Letters have political Meanings. Thus *N* shall signify a Plot, *B* a Regiment of Horse, *L* a Fleet at Sea. Or secondly, by transposing the Letters of the Alphabet in any suspected Paper, who can discover the deepest Designs of a discontented Party. So for Example, if I should say in a Letter to a Friend, *Our Brother Tom has just got the Piles*, a Man of Skill in this Art would discover how the same Letters which compose that Sentence, may be analysed into the following Words; *Resist——a Plot is brought Home——The Tour.* And this is the Anagrammatick Method.

The Professor made me great Acknowledgments for communicating these Observations, and promised to make honourable mention of me in his Treatise.

I saw nothing in this Country that could invite me to a longer Continuance, and began to think of returning home to *England*.

CHAP. VII.

The Author leaves Lagado, *arrives at* Maldonada. *No Ship ready. He takes a short Voyage to* Glubbdubdribb. *His Reception by the Governor.*

THE Continent of which this Kingdom was a Part, extends itself, as I have Reason to believe, Eastward to that unknown Tract of *America*, Westward of *California*, and North to the Pacifick Ocean, which is not above a hundred and fifty Miles from *Lagado*, where there is a good Port, and much Commerce with the great Island of *Luggnagg*, situated to the North-West about 29 Degrees North-Latitude, and 140 Longitude. This Island of *Luggnagg* stands South-Eastwards of *Japan* about an hundred Leagues distant. There is a strict Alliance between the *Japanese* Emperor and the King of *Luggnagg*, which affords frequent Opportunities of sailing from one Island to the other. I determined therefore to direct my Course this Way, in order to my Return to *Europe*. I hired two Mules with a Gnide to shew me the Way, and carry my small Baggage. I took Leave of my noble Protector who had shewn me so much Favour and made me a generous Present at my Departure.

My Journey was without any Accident or Adventure worth relating. When I arriv'd at the Port of *Maldonada*, (for so it is called) there was no Ship in the Harbour bound for *Luggnagg*, nor like to be in some time. The Town is about as large as *Portsmouth*. I soon fell into some Acquaintance, and was very hospitably received. A Gentleman of Distinction said to me, that since the Ships bound for *Luggnagg* could not be ready in less than a Month, it might be no disagreeable Amusement for me to take a Trip to the little Island of *Glubbdubdribb*, about five Leagues off to the South-West. He offered himself and a Friend to accompany

by me, and that I ſhould be provided with a ſmall convenient Barque for the Voyage.

GLUBBDUBDRIBB, as nearly as I can interpret the Word ſignifies the Iſland of *Sorcerers* or *Magicians*. It is about one third as large as the Iſle of *Wight*, and extremely fruitful: It is governed by the Head of a certain Tribe, who are all Magicians. This Tribe marries only among each other, and the eldeſt in Succeſſion is Prince or Governor. He hath a noble Palace, and a Park of about three thouſand Acres, ſurrounded by a Wall of hewn Stone twenty Foot high. In this Park are ſeveral ſmaller Incloſures for Cattle, Corn, and Gardening.

The Governor and his Family are ſerved and attended by Domeſticks of a kind ſomewhat unuſual. By his Skill in Necromancy, he hath a Power of calling whom he pleaſeth from the Dead, and commanding their Service for twenty four Hours, but no longer; nor can he call the ſame Perſons up again in leſs than three Months, except upon very extraordinary Occaſions.

When we arrived at the Iſland, which was about eleven in the Morning, one of the Gentlemen who accompanied me, went to the Governor, and deſired Admittance for a Stranger, who came on Purpoſe to have the Honour of attending on his Highneſs. This was immediately granted, and we all three enter'd the Gate of the Palace between two Rows of Guards, armed and dreſſed after a very antick Manner, and ſomething in their Countenances that made my Fleſh creep with a Horror I cannot expreſs. We paſſed through ſeveral Apartments between Servants of the ſame Sort, ranked on each Side as before, 'till we came to the Chamber of Preſence; where, after three profound Obeyſances, and a few general Queſtions, we were permitted to ſit on three Stools near the loweſt Step of his Highneſs's Throne. He underſtood the Language of *Balnibarbi*, although it were different from that of his Iſland. He deſired me to give him ſome Account of my Travels; and to let me ſee that I ſhould be treated without Ceremony, he diſmiſſed all his Attendants with a turn of his Fingers; at which to my great Aſtoniſhment, they vaniſhed in an Inſtant like Viſions in a Dream, when we awake on a ſudden. I could not recover myſelf

in

in ſome Time, till the Governor aſſured me that I ſhould receive no Hurt; and obſerving my two Companions to be under no Concern, who had been often entertained in the ſame Manner, I began to take Courage, and related to his Highneſs a ſhort Hiſtory of my ſeveral Adventures, yet not without ſome Heſitation, and frequently looking behind me to the Place where I had ſeen thoſe domeſtick Spectres. I had the Honour to dine with the Governor, where a new Set of Ghoſts ſerved up the Meat, and waited at Table. I now obſerved myſelf to be leſs terrified than I had been in the Morning. I ſtaid 'till Sun-ſet, but humbly deſired his Highneſs to excuſe me for not accepting of his Invitation of Lodging in the Palace. My two Friends and I lay at a private Houſe in the Town adjoining, which is the Capital of this little Iſland; and the next Morning we returned to pay our Duty to the Governor, as he was pleaſed to command us.

After this Manner we continued in the Iſland for ten Days, moſt Part of every Day with the Governor, and at Night in our Lodgings. I ſoon grew ſo familiariz'd to the Sight of Spirits that after the third or fourth Time they gave me no Emotion at all; as if I had any Apprehenſions left, my Curioſity prevailed over them. For his Highneſs the Governor order'd me to call up whatever Perſons I would chuſe to Name, and in whatever Numbers, among all the Dead from the Beginning of the World to the preſent Time, and commanded them to anſwer any Queſtions I ſhould think fit to aſk, with this Condition, that my Queſtions muſt be confined within the Compaſs of the Times they lived in. And one Thing I might depend upon, that they would certainly tell me Truth, for Lying was a Talent of no uſe in the lower World.

I made my humble Acknowledgements to his Highneſs for ſo great a Favour. We were in a Chamber, from whence there was a fair Proſpect into the Park. And becauſe my firſt Inclination was to be entertain'd with Scenes of Pomp and Magnificence, I deſired to ſee *Alexander the Great*, at the Head of his Army juſt after the Battle of *Arbela*; which upon a Motion of the Governor's Finger immediately appeared in a large Field under the Window were we ſtood. *Alexander* was called up into the Room: It was with great Difficulty that I underſtood

ſtood his *Greek*, and had but little of my own. He aſſured me upon his Honour that he was not poiſoned, but died of a Fever by exceſſive Drinking.

Next I ſaw *Hannibal* paſſing the *Alps*, who told me he had not a Drop of Vinegar in his Camp.

I ſaw *Cæſar* and *Pompey* at the Head of their Troops juſt ready to engage. I ſaw the former in his laſt great Triumph. I deſired that the Senate of *Rome* might appear before me in one large Chamber, and an Aſſembly of ſomewhat a latter Age, in counterview in another. The firſt ſeemed to be an Aſſembly of Heroes and demi-gods: The other a Knot of of Pedlars, Pick-pockets, Highway-men and Bullies.

The Governor at my Requeſt gave the Sign for *Cæſar* and *Brutus* to advance towards us. I was ſtruck with a profound Veneration at the Sight of *Brutus*, and could eaſily diſcover the moſt conſummate Virtue, the greateſt Intrepidity, and firmneſs of Mind, the trueſt Love of his Country, and general Benevolence for Mankind in every Lineament of his Countenance. I obſerved with much Pleaſure, that theſe two Perſons were in good Intelligence with each other, and *Cæſar* freely confeſſed to me, that the greateſt Actions of his own Life were not equal by many Degrees to the Glory of taking it away. I had the Honour to have much Converſation with *Brutus*; and was told that his Anceſtors *Junius*, *Socrates*, *Epaminondas*, *Cato* the Younger, Sir *Thomas Moor* and himſelf, were perpetually together: A *Sextumvirate* to which all the Ages of the World cannot add a Seventh.

It would be tedious to trouble the Reader with relating what vaſt Numbers of illuſtrious Perſons were called up, to gratify that inſatiable Deſire I had to ſee the World in every Period of Antiquity placed before me. I chiefly fed mine Eyes with beholding the Deſtroyers of Tyrants and Uſurpers, and the Reſtorers of Liberty to oppreſſed and injured Nations. But it is impoſible to expreſs the Satisfaction I received in my own Mind, after ſuch a Manner as to make it a ſuitable Entertainment to the Reader.

CHAP. VIII.

A further Account of Glubbdubdribb. *Antient and modern History corrected.*

HAVING a Desire to see those Antients who were most renowned for Wit and Learning, I set apart one Day on Purpose. I proposed that *Homer* and *Aristotle* might appear at the Head of all their Commentators; but these were so numerous that some Hundreds were forced to attend in the Court, and outward Rooms of the Palace. I new and could distinguish those two Heroes at first Sight, not only from the Croud, but from each other. *Homer* was the taller and comlier Person of the two, walked very erect for one of his Age, and his Eyes were the most quick and piercing I ever beheld. *Aristotle* stooped much, and made use of a Staff. His Visage was meager, his Hair lank and thin, and his Voice hollow. I soon discover'd that both of them were perfect Strangers to the rest of the Company, and had never seen or heard of them before. And I had a Whisper from a Ghost, who shall be nameless, that these Commentators always kept in the most distant Quarters from their Principals in the lower World, through a Consciousness of Shame and Guilt, because they had so horribly misrepresented the Meaning of those Authors to Posterity. I introduced *Didymus* and *Eustathius* to *Homer*, and prevailed on him to treat them better than perhaps they deserved; for he soon found they wanted a Genius to enter into the Spirit of a Poet. But *Aristotle* was out of all Patience with the Account I gave him of *Scotus* and *Ramus*, as I presented them to him; and he asked them, whether the rest of the Tribe were as great Dunces as themselves.

I then desired the Governor to call up *Descartes* and *Gassendi*, with whom I prevailed to explain their Systems to *Aristotle*. This great Philosopher freely acknowledg'd his own Mistakes in Natural Philosophy, because he proceeded in many Things upon conjecture, as all Men must do; and he found, that *Gassendi*, who had made the Doctrine of *Epicurus* as palatable as he could, and

the

the *Vortices* of *Deſcartes*, were equally exploded. He predicted the ſame Fate to *Attraction*, whereof the preſent learned are ſuch zealous Aſſertors. He ſaid, that new Syſtems of Nature were but new Faſhions, which would vary in every Age; and even thoſe who pretend to demonſtrate them from mathematical Principles, would flouriſh but a ſhort Period of Time, and be out of Vogue when that was determined.

I ſpent five Days in converſing with many others of the antient Learned. I ſaw moſt of the firſt *Roman* Emperors. I prevailed on the Governor to call up *Heliogabalus*'s Cooks to dreſs us a Dinner; but they could not ſhew us much of their Skill, for want of Materials. A *Helot* of *Ageſilaus* made us a Diſh of *Spartan* Broth; but I was not able to get down a ſecond Spoonful.

The two Gentlemen who conducted me to the Iſland, were preſſed by their private Affairs to return in three Days, which I employ'd in ſeeing ſome of the modern Dead, who had made the greateſt Figure for two or three hundred Years paſt in our own and other Countries of *Europe*; and having been always a great Admirer of old illuſtrious Families, I deſired the Governor would call up a dozen or two of Kings with their Anceſtors in order, for eight or nine Generations. But my Diſappointment was grievous and unexpected: For inſtead of a long Train with royal Diadems, I ſaw in one Family two Fidlers, three ſpruce Courtiers, and an *Italian* Prelate. In another a Barber, an Abbot, and two Cardinals. I have too great a Veneration for crowned Heads to dwell any longer on ſo nice a Subject. But as to Counts, Marqueſſes, Dukes, Earls, and the like, I was not ſo ſcrupulous. And I confeſs it was not without ſome pleaſure that I found myſelf able to trace the Particular Features, by which certain Families are diſtinguiſhed, up to their Originals. I could plainly diſcover from whence one Family derives a long Chin, why a ſecond hath abounded with Knaves for two Generations, and Fools for two more; why a third happen'd to be crack brained, and a fourth to be Sharpers. Whence it came what *Polydore Virgil* ſays of a certain great Houſe, *Nec Vir fortes, nec Fœmina caſta.* How Cruelty, Falſhood, and Cowardice grew to be Characteriſticks, by which certain Families are diſtinguiſhed as much as

by

by their Coats of Arms. Who first brought the Pox into a noble House, which hath lineally descended in scrophulous Tumours to their Posterity. Neither could I wonder at all this, when I saw such an Interruption of Lineages by Pages, Lacqueys, Valets, Coachmen, Gamesters, Captains, and Pick-pockets.

I was chiefly disgusted with modern History. For having strictly examined all the Persons of greatest Name in the Courts of Princes for an hundred Years past, I found how the World had been misled by prostitute Writers, to ascribe the greatest Exploits in War to Cowards, the wisest Counsel to Fools, Sincerity to Flatterers, *Roman* Virtue to Betrayers of their Country, Piety to Atheists, Chastity to Sodomites, Truth to Informers. How many innocent and excellent Persons had been condemned to Death or Banishment, by the practising of great Ministers upon the Corruption of Judges, and the Malice of Faction. How many Villains had been exalted to the highest Places of Trust, Power, Dignity, and Profit: How great a Share in the Motions and Events of Courts, Councils and Senates, might be challenged by Bawds, Whores, Pimps, Parasites, and Buffoons: How low an Opinion I had of human Wisdom and Integrity, when I was truly informed of the Springs and Motives of great Enterprises and Revolutions in the World, and of the contemptible Accidents to which they owed their Success.

Here I discovered the Roguery and Ignorance of those who pretend to write *Anecdotes*, or secret History, who send so many Kings to their Graves with a Cup of Poison; will repeat the Discourse between a Prince and Chief Minister, where no Witness was by; unlock the Thoughts and Cabinets of Embassadors and Secretaries of State, and have the perpetual Misfortune to be mistaken. Here I discovered the secret Causes of many great Events that have surprised the World; how a Whore can govern the Back-stairs, the Back-stairs a Council, and the Council a Senate. A General confessed in my Presence, that he got a Victory purely by the Force of Cowardice and ill Conduct; and an Admiral, that for want of proper Intelligence, he beat the Enemy to whom he intended to betray the Fleet. Three Kings protested to me, that in their whole Reigns they did never once prefer any Person of Merit,

Merit, unleſs by Miſtake, or Treachery of ſome Miniſter in whom they confided: Neither would they do it, if they were to live again; and they ſhewed with great Strength of Reaſon, that the royal Throne could not be ſupported without Corruption, becauſe that poſitive, confident, reſtive Temper, which Virtue infuſed into Man, was a perpetual Clog to publick Buſineſs.

I had the Curioſity to enquire in a particular Manner, by what Method great Numbers had procured to themſelves high Titles of Honour, and prodigious Eſtates; and I confined my Enquiry to a very modern Period: However, without grating upon preſent Times, becauſe I would be ſure to give no Offence even to Foreigners, (for I hope the Reader need not be told, that I do not in the leaſt intend my own Country, in what I ſay upon this Occaſion) a great Number of Perſons concerned were called up, and upon a very ſlight Examination, diſcovered ſuch a Scene of Infamy, that I cannot reflect upon it without ſome Seriouſneſs. Perjury, Oppreſſion, Subornation, Fraud, Pandariſm, and the like *Infirmities*, were amongſt the moſt excuſable Arts they had to mention, and for theſe I gave, as it was reaſonable, great Allowance. But when ſome confeſſed they owed their Greatneſs and Wealth to Sodomy or Inceſt; others to the proſtituting of their own Wives and Daughters; others to the betraying their Country or their Prince; ſome to poiſoning, more to the perverting of Juſtice, in order to deſtroy the Innocent: I hope I may be pardoned if theſe Diſcoveries inclined me a little to abate of that profound Veneration which I am naturally apt to pay to Perſons of high Rank, who ought to be treated with the utmoſt Reſpect due to their ſublime Dignity, by us their Inferiors.

I had often read of ſome great Services done to Princes and States, and deſired to ſee the Perſons by whom thoſe Services were performed. Upon Enquiry, I was told, that their Names were to be found on no Record, except a few of them whom Hiſtory hath repreſented as the vileſt Rogues and Traitors. As to the reſt, I had never once heard of them. They all appeared with dejected Looks, and in the meaneſt Habit, moſt of them telling me they died in Poverty and Diſgrace, and the reſt on a Scaffold or a Gibbet.

Among the reſt, there was one Per-

ſon whoſe Caſe appeared a little ſingular. He had a Youth about eighteen Years old ſtanding by his Side. He told me he had for many Years been Commander of a Ship, and in the Sea-Fight at *Actium*, had the good Fortune to break through the Enemy's great Line of Battle, ſink three of their capital Ships, and take a fourth, which was the ſole Cauſe of *Anthony*'s Flight, and of the Victory that enſued; that the Youth ſtanding by him, his only Son was killed in the Action. He added, that upon the Confidence of ſome Merit, this War being at an End, he went to *Rome*, and ſolicited at the Court of *Auguſtus* to be prefered to a greater Ship, whoſe Commander had been killed; but without any Regard to his Pretenſions, it was given to a Youth who had never ſeen the Sea, the Son of *Libertina*, who waited on one of the Emperor's Miſtreſſes. Returning back to his own Veſſels, he was charged with Neglect of Duty, and the Ship given to a Favourite Page of *Publicola* the Vice-Admiral; whereupon he retired to a poor Farm at a great Diſtance from *Rome*, and there ended his Life. I was ſo curious to know the Truth of this Story, that I deſired *Agrippa* might be called, who was Admiral in that Fight. He appeared, and confirmed the whole Account, but with much more Advantage to the Captain, whoſe Modeſty had extenuated or concealed a great part of his Merit.

I was ſurpriſed to find Corruption grown ſo high and ſo quick in that Empire, by the Force of Luxury ſo lately introduced, which made me leſs wonder at many parallel Caſes in other Countries, where Vices of all kinds have reigned ſo much longer, and where the whole Praiſe as well as Pillage hath been engroſſed by the chief Commander, who perhaps had the leaſt Title to either.

As every Perſon called up made exactly the ſame Appearance he had done in the World, it gave me melancholly Reflections to obſerve, how much the Race of human Kind was degenerated among us, within theſe hundred Years paſt. How the Pox, under all its Conſequences and Denominations, had altered every Lineament of an *Engliſh* Countenance, ſhortned the Size of Bodies, unbraced the Nerves, and relaxed the Sinews and Muſcles, introduced a ſwallow Complexion, and rendered the Fleſh looſe and *Rancid*.

I deſcended

I descended so low, as to desire that some *English* Yeomen of the old Stamp might be summoned to appear, once so famous for the Simplicity of their Manners, Diet and Dress, for Justice in their Dealings, for their true Spirit of Liberty, for their Valour and Love of their Country. Neither could I be wholly unmoved, after comparing the Living with the Dead, when I considered how all these pure native Virtues were prostituted for a Piece of Money by their Grand-Children, who in selling their Votes, and managing at Elections, have acquired every Vice and Corruption that can possibly be learned in a Court.

CHAP. IX.

The Author's Return to Maldonada. *Sails to the Kingdom of* Luggnagg. *The Author confined. He is sent for to Court. The Manner of his Admittance. The King's great Lenity to his Subjects.*

THE Day of our Departure being come, I took leave of his Highness the Governor of *Glubbdubdribb*, and returned with my two Companions to *Maldonada*, where after a Fortnight's waiting, a Ship was ready to sail for *Luggnagg*. The two Gentlemen and some others were so generous and kind as to furnish me with Provisions and see me on board. I was a Month in this Voyage. We had one violent Storm, and were under a Necessity of steering Westward to get into the Trade-Wind, which holds for above sixty Leagues. On the 21*st* of *April* 1711, we sailed in the River *Clumegnig*, which is a Sea-port Town, at the South-East Point of *Luggnagg*. We cast Anchor within a League of the Town, and made a Signal for a Pilot. Two of them came on Board in less than half an Hour, by whom we were guided between certain Shoals and Rocks, which are very dangerous in a Passage to a large Bason, where a Fleet may ride in safety within a Cable's Length of the Town-Wall.

Some of our Sailors, whether out of Treachery

Treachery or Inadvertence, had informed the Pilots that I was a Stranger, and a great Traveller, whereof these gave Notice to a Custom-House Officer, by whom I was examined very strictly upon my Landing. This Officer spoke to me in the Language of *Balnibarbi*, which by the Force of much Commerce is generally nnderstood in that Town, especially by Sea Men, and those employed in the Customs. I gave him a short Account of some Particulars, and made my Story as plausible and consistent, as I could; but I thought it necessary to disguise my Country, and call myself an *Hollander*, because my Intentions were for *Japan*, and I knew the *Dutch* were the only *Europeans* permitted to enter into that Kingdom. I therefore told the Officer, that having been shipwreck'd on the Coast of *Balnibarbi*, and cast on a Rock, I was received up into the *Laputa*, or the Flying Island (of which he had often heard) and was now endeavouring to get to *Japan*, from whence I might find a Convenience of returning to my own Country. The Officer said, I must be confined 'till he could receive Orders from Court, for which he would write immediately, and hoped for to receive an Answer in a Fortnight. I was carried to a convenient Lodging, with a Centinel placed at the Door; however, I had the Liberty of a large Garden, and was treated with Humanity enough, being maintained all the Time at the King's Charge. I was invited by several Persons, chiefly out of Curiosity, because it was reported that I came from Countries very remote, of which they never heard.

I hired a young Man, who came in the same Ship, to be an Interpreter; he was a Native of *Luggnagg*, but had lived some Years at *Maldonada*, and was a perfect Master of both Languages. By his Assistance I was able to hold a Conversation with those who came to visit me; but this consisted only of their Questions, and my Answers.

The Dispatch came from Court about the Time we expected. It contain'd a Warrant for conducting me and my Retinue to *Traldragdubh* or *Trildrogdrib*, for it is pronounced both Ways as near as I can remember, by a Party of ten Horse. All my Retinue was that poor Lad for an Interpreter, whom I persuaded into my Service, and at my humble Request, we had each of us a Mule to ride on. A Messenger was dispatched

diſpatched half a Day's Journey before us, to give the King Notice of my Approach, and to deſire that his Majeſty would pleaſe to appoint a Day and Hour, when it would be his gracious Pleaſure that I might have the Honour to *lick the Duſt before his Footſtool.* This is the Court Style, and I found it to be more than Matter of Form. For upon my Admittance two Days after my Arrival, I was commanded to crawl on my Belly, and lick the Floor as I advanced; but Care was taken to have it ſwept ſo clean that the Duſt was not offenſive. However, this was a peculiar Grace, not allowed to any but Perſons of the higheſt Rank, when they deſire an Admittance. Nay, ſometimes the Floor is ſtrewed with Duſt on purpoſe, when the Perſon to be admitted happens to have powerful Enemies at Court. And I have ſeen a great Lord with his Mouth ſo crammed, that when he had crept to the proper Diſtance from the Throne, he was not able to ſpeak a Word. Neither is there any Remedy, becauſe it is Capital for thoſe who receive an Audience to ſpit or wipe their Mouths in his Majeſty's Preſence. There is indeed another Cuſtom, which I cannot altogether approve of. When the King hath a Mind to put any of his Nobles to Death in a gentle indulgent Manner, he commands to have the Floor ſtrewed with a certain brown Powder, of a deadly Compoſition, which being licked up, infallibly kills him in twenty-four Hours. But in Juſtice to this Prince's great Clemency, and the Care he hath of his Subjects Lives, (wherein it were much to be wiſhed that the Monarchs of *Europe* would imitate him) it muſt be mentioned for his Honour, that ſtrict Orders are given to have the infected Parts of the Floor well waſh'd after every ſuch Execution; which if his Domeſticks neglect, they are in Danger of incurring his Royal Diſpleaſure. I myſelf heard him give Directions, that one of his Pages ſhould be whipt, whoſe Turn it was to give Notice about waſhing the Floor after an Execution, but maliciouſly had omitted it; by which Neglect a young Lord of great Hopes coming to an Audience, was unfortunately poiſoned, although the King at that Time had no Deſign againſt his Life. But this good Prince was ſo gracious as to forgive the poor Page his Whipping, upon Promiſe that he would do ſo no more, without ſpecial Orders.

To return from this Digreſſion;

when I had crept with in four Yards of the Throne, I raiſed myſelf gently upon my Knees, and then ſtriking my Forehead ſeven times on the Ground, I pronounced the following Words, as they had been taught me the Night before, *Ickpling Gloffthrobb Squutſerumm blhiop Mlaſhnalt, Zwin tnodbalkguffh Slhiop-had Gurdlubb Aſht.* This is the Compliment eſtabliſhed by the Laws of the Land for all Perſons admitted to the King's Preſence. It may be rendered into *Engliſh* thus: *May your Cæleſtial Majeſty out-live the Sun, eleven Moons and one half.* To this the King returned ſome Anſwer, which although I could not underſtand, yet I replied as I had been directed; *Fluſt drin Yalerick Dwuldom praſtrad mirpuſh*, which properly ſignifies, *My Tongue is in the Mouth of my Friend*, and by this Expreſſion was meant that I deſired leave to bring my Interpreter; whereupon the young Man already mentioned was accordingly introduced, by whoſe intervention I anſwered as many Queſtions as his Majeſty could put in above an Hour. I ſpoke in the *Balnibarbian* Tongue, and my Interpreter delivered my Meaning in that of *Luggnagg*.

The King was much delighted with my Company, and ordered his *Bliffmarklub* or high Chamberlain, to appoint a Lodging in the Court for me and my Interpreter, with a daily Allowance for my Table, and a large Purſe of Gold for my common Expences.

I ſtayed three Months in this Country out of perfect Obedience to his Majeſty, who was pleaſed highly to favour me, and made me very honourable Offers. But I thought it more conſiſtent with Prudence and Juſtice to paſs the remainder of my Days with my Wife and Family.

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

The Luggnaggians *commended. A particular Deſcription of the* Struldbruggs, *with many Converſations between the Author, and ſome eminent Perſons upon that Subject.*

THE *Luggnaggians* are a polite and generous People, and altho' they are not without ſome ſhare of that Pride which is peculiar to all *Eaſtern* Countries, yet they ſhew themſelves courteous to Strangers, eſpecially ſuch who are countenanced by the Court. I had many Acquaintance among Perſons of the beſt Faſhion, and being always attended by my Interpreter, the Converſation we had was not diſagreeable.

One Day in much good Company I was aſked by a Perſon of Quality, whether I had ſeen any of their *Struldbruggs* or *Immortals*. I ſaid I had not, and deſired he would explain to me what he meant by ſuch an Appellation applied to a mortal Creature. He told me, that ſometimes, though very rarely, a Child happened to be born in a Family with a red circular Spot in the Forehead, directly over the Left Eye-brow, which was an infallible Mark that it ſhould never die. The Spot, as he deſcribed it, was about the compaſs of a ſilver Threepence, but in the Courſe of Time grew larger, and changed its Colour; for at twelve Years old it became Green, ſo continued 'till five and twenty, then turn'd to a deep Blue; at five and forty it grew coal Black, and as large as an *Engliſh* Shilling, but never admitted any farther Alteration. He ſaid theſe Births were ſo rare, that he did not believe there could be above Eleven Hundred *Struldbruggs* of both Sexes in the whole Kingdom, of which he computed about fifty in the Metropolis, and among the reſt a young Girl born about three Years ago. That theſe Productions were not peculiar to any Family, but a meer Effect of Chance; and the Children of the *Struldbruggs* themſelves were equally mortal with the reſt of the People.

I freely own myſelf to have been ſtruck with inexpreſſible Delight upon hearing this Account: And the Perſon who gave it me happening to underſtand the *Balni-*

barbian

barbian Language, which I ſpoke very well, I could not forbear breaking out into Expreſſions perhaps a little too extravagant. I cryed out as in a Rapture; Happy Nation, where every Child hath at leaſt a Chance for being immortal! Happy People, who enjoy ſo many living Examples of antient Virtue, and have Maſters ready to inſtruct them in the Wiſdom of all former Ages! But, happieſt beyond all Compariſon are thoſe excellent *Struldbruggs*, who born exempt from that univerſal Calamity of human Nature, have their Minds free and diſengaged, without the Weight and depreſſion of Spirits cauſed by the continual Apprehenſion of Death. I diſcovered my Admiration that I had not obſerved any of theſe illuſtrious Perſons at Court; the black Spot on the Forehead, being ſo remarkable a Diſtinction, that I could not have eaſily overlooked it: And it was impoſſible that his Majeſty, a moſt judicious Prince, ſhould not provide himſelf with a good Number of ſuch wiſe and able Councellors. Yet perhaps the Virtue of thoſe Reverend Sages was too ſtrict for the Corrupt and Libertine Manners of a Court. And we often find by Experience, that young Men are too opinionative and volatile to be guided by the ſober dictates of their Seniors. However, ſince the King was pleaſed to allow me acceſs to his Royal Perſon, I was reſolved upon the very firſt Occaſion to deliver my Opinion to him on this Matter freely, and at large by the Help of my Interpreter; and whether he would pleaſe to take my Advice or no, yet in one thing I was determined, that his Majeſty having frequently offered me an Eſtabliſhment in this Country, I would with great Thankfulneſs accept the Favour, and paſs my Life here in the Converſation of thoſe ſuperior Beings the *Struldbruggs*, if they would pleaſe to admit me.

The Gentleman to whom I addreſſed my Diſcourſe, becauſe (as I have already obſerved) he ſpoke the Language of *Balnibarbi*, ſaid to me with a ſort of a Smile, which uſually ariſes from Pity to the Ignorant, that he was glad of any occaſion to keep me among them, and deſired my Permiſſion to explain to the Company what I had ſpoke. He did ſo, and they talked together for ſome time in their own Language, whereof I underſtood not a Syllable, neither could I obſerve by their Countenances what Impreſſion my Diſcourſe had made on them.

them. After a short Silence, the same Person told me, that his Friends and mine (so he thought fit to express himself) were very much pleased with the judicious Remarks I had made on the great Happiness and Advantages of immortal Life; and they were desirous to know in a particular Manner, what Scheme of Living I should have formed to myself, if it had fallen to my Lot to have been born at *Struldbrugg*.

I answered, it was easy to be eloquent on so copious and delightful a Subject, especially to me who have been often apt to amuse myself with Visions of what I should do if I were a King, a General, or a great Lord: And upon this very Case I had frequently run over the whole System how I should employ myself, and pass the Time, if I were sure to live for ever.

That if it had been my good Fortune to come into the World at *Struldbrugg*, as soon as I could discover my own Happiness by understanding the difference between Life and Death, I would first resolve by all Arts and Methods whatsoever to procure myself Riches. In the pursuit of which, by Thrift and Management, I might reasonably expect, in about two hundred Years, to be the wealthiest Man in the Kingdom. In the second Place, I would from my earliest Youth apply myself to the Study of Arts and Sciences, by which I would arrive in time to excel all others in Learning. Lastly, I would carefully record every Action and Event of Consequence that happened in the publick; impartially draw the Characters of the several Successions of Princes, and great Ministers of State, with my own Observations on every Point. I would exactly set down the several Changes in Customs, Languages, Fashions, Dress, Diet and Diversions. By all which Acquirements, I should be a living Treasury of Knowledge and Wisdom, and certainly become the Oracle of the Nation.

I would never marry after threescore, but live in an hospitable Manner, yet still on the saving Side. I would entertain myself in forming and directing the Minds of hopeful young Men, by convincing them from my own Remembrance, Experience and Observation, fortified by numerous Examples, of the usefulness of Virtue in publick and private Life. But, my choice and constant Companions should

be a Sett of my own immortal Brotherhood, among whom I would elect a dozen from the most antient down to my own Contemporaries. Where any of these wanted Fortunes, I would provide them with convenient Lodges round my own Estate, and have some of them always at my Table, only mingling a few of the most valuable among you Mortals, whom length of Time would harden me to lose with little or no Reluctance, and treat your Posterity after the same Manner, just as a Man diverts himself with the annual Succession of Pinks and Tulips in his Garden, without regretting the Loss of those which withered the preceeding Year.

These *Struldbruggs* and I would mutually communicate our Observations and Memorials through the Course of Time, remark the several Gradations by which Corruption steals into the World, and oppose it in every Step, by giving perpetual Warning and Instruction to Mankind; which, added to the strong Influence of our own Example, would probably prevent that continual Degeneracy of human Nature so justly complained of in all Ages.

And to all this, the Pleasure of seeing the various Revolutions of States and Empires, the Changes in the lower and upper World, ancient Cities in Ruins, and obscure Villages become the Seats of Kings: Famous Rivers lessening into shallow Brooks, the Ocean leaving one Coast dry, and overwhelming another: The Discovery of many Countries yet unknown: Barbarity over-running the politest Nations, and the most barbarous become civilized. I should then see the Discovery of the *Longitude*, the *Perpetual Motion*, the *Universal Medicine*, and many other great Inventions brought to the utmost Perfection.

What wonderful Discoveries should we make in Astronomy, by outliving and confirming our own predictions, by observing the Progress and Returns of Comets, with the Changes of Motion in the Sun, Moon, and Stars.

I enlarged upon many other Topicks which the natural Desire of endless Life and sublunary Happiness could easily furnish me with. When I had ended, and the Sum of my Discourse had been interpreted as before, to the rest of the Company, there was a good deal of Talk, among

mong them in the Language of the Country, not without ſome Laughter at my Expence. At laſt the ſame Gentleman who had been my Interpreter, ſaid, he was deſired by the reſt to ſet me right in a few Miſtakes, which I had fallen into through the common Imbecility of human Nature, and upon that Allowance was leſs anſwerable for them. That this Breed of *Struldbruggs* was peculiar to their Country, for there was no ſuch People either in *Balnibarbi* or *Japan*, where he had the Honour to be Embaſſador from his Majeſty, and found the Natives in both theſe Kingdoms very hard to believe that the Fact was poſſible; and it appeared from my Aſtoniſhment when he firſt mentioned the Matter to me, that I received it as a thing wholly new, and ſcarcely to be credited. That in the two Kingdoms above mentioned, where during his Reſidence he had converſe very much, he obſerved long Life to be the univerſal Deſire and Wiſh of Mankind. That whoever had one Foot in the Grave, was ſure to hold back the other as ſtrongly as he could. That the eldeſt had ſtill Hopes of living one Day longer, and looked on Death as the greateſt Evil, from which Nature always prompted him to retreat; only in this Iſland of *Luggnagg*, the Appetite for living was not ſo eager, from the continual Example of the *Struldbruggs* before their Eyes.

That the Syſtem of Living contrived by me was unreaſonable and unjuſt, becauſe it ſuppoſed a Perpetuity of Youth, Health, and Vigour, which no Man could be ſo fooliſh to hope, however extravagant he may be in his Wiſhes. That the Queſtion therefore was not whether a Man would chuſe to be always in the Prime of Youth, attended with Proſperity and Health, but how he would paſs a perpetual Life under all the uſual Diſadvantages which old Age brings along with it. For although few Men will avow their Deſires of being immortal upon ſuch hard Conditions, yet in the two Kingdoms before-mentioned of *Balnibarbi* and *Japan*, he obſerved that every Man deſired to put off Death for ſome time longer, let it approach ever ſo late; and he rarely heard of any Man who died willingly, except he were incited by the Extremity of Grief or Torture. And he appealed to me, whether in thoſe Countries I had travelled, as well as my own, I had not obſerved the ſame general Diſpoſition.

After

After this Preface, he gave me a particular Account of the *Struldbruggs* among them. He ſaid, they commonly acted like Mortals, 'till about thirty Years old, after which, by Degrees, they grew melancholly and dejected, increaſing in both 'till they came to fourſcore. This he learnt from their own Confeſſion; for otherwiſe there not being above two or three of that Species born in an Age were too few to form a general Obſervation by. When they come to fourſcore Years, which is reckoned the Extremity of Living in this Country, they had not only all the Follies and Infirmities of other old Men, but many more, which aroſe from the dreadful Proſpects of never dying. They were not only opiniative, peeviſh, covetous, moroſe, vain, talkative, but uncapable of Friendſhip, and dead to all natural Affection, which never deſcended below their Grand-Children. Envy and impotent Deſires are their prevailing Paſſions. But thoſe Objects againſt which their Envy ſeems principally directed, are the Vices of the younger ſort, and the Deaths of the old. By reflecting on the former, they find themſelves cut off from all Poſſibility of Pleaſure; and whenever they ſee a Funeral, they lament and repine that others are gone to an Harbour of Reſt, to which they themſelves can never hope to arrive. They have no Remembrance of any thing but what they learned and obſerved in their Youth and middle Age, and even that is very imperfect. And for the Truth or Particulars of any Fact, it is ſafer to depend upon common Traditions than upon their beſt Recollections. The leaſt miſerable among them appear to be thoſe who turn to Dotage, and entirely loſe their Memories; theſe meet with more Pity and Aſſiſtance, becauſe they want many bad Qualities which abound in others.

If a *Struldbrugg* happen to marry one of his own Kind, the Marriage is diſſolved of Courſe by the Courteſy of the Kingdom, as ſoon as the younger of the two come to be fourſcore. For the Law thinks it a reaſonable Indulgence, that thoſe who are condemned without any Fault of their own to a perpetual Continuance in the World, ſhould not have their Miſery doubled by the Load of a Wife.

As ſoon as they have compleated the Term of eighty Years, they are look'd on as dead in Law; their Heirs immediately

diately succeed to their Estates, only a small Pittance is reserved for their Support, and the poor ones are maintained at the publick Charge. After that Period they are held incapable of any Employment of Trust or Profit; they cannot purchase Lands or take Leases, neither are they allowed to be Witnesses in any Cause, either Civil or Criminal, not even for the Decision of Meers and Bounds.

At Ninety they lose their Teeth and Hair; they have at that Age no Distinction of Taste, but eat and drink whatever they can get, without Relish or Appetite: The Diseases they were subject to still continuing without increasing or diminishing. In talking they forgot the common Appellation of Things, and the Names of Persons, even of those who are the neareſt Friends and Relations. For the same Reason, they never can amuse themselves with Reading, because their Memory will not serve to carry them from the Beginning of a Sentence to the End; and by this Defect they are deprived of the only Entretainment whereof they might otherwise be capable.

The Language of this Country being always upon the Flux, the *Struldbruggs* of one Age do not understand those of another, neither are they able after two hundred Years to hold any Conversation (farther than by a few general Words) with their Neighbours the Mortals; and thus they lie under the Disadvantage of living like Foreigners in their own Country.

This was the Account giving me of the *Struldbruggs*, as near as I can remember. I afterwards saw five or six of different Ages, the youngest not above two hundred Years old, who were brought me at several times by some of my Friends; but although they were told that I was a great Traveller, and had seen all the World, they had not the least Curiosity to ask me a Question; only desired I would give them *Slumskudask*, or a Token of Remembrance, which is a modest Way of Begging, to avoid the Law that strickly forbids it, because they are provided for by the Publick, although, indeed, with a very scanty Allowance.

They are deprived and hated by all sort of People: When one of them is born, it is reckoned ominous, and their

Birth is recorded very particularly; ſo that you may know their Age by conſulting the Regiſtry, which, however, hath not been kept above a thouſand Years paſt, or at leaſt have been deſtroyed by Time or publick Diſturbances. But the uſual way of computing how old they are, is by aſking them what Kings or great Perſons they can remember, and then conſulting Hiſtory; for infallibly the laſt Prince, in their Mind, did not begin his Reign after they were fourſcore Years old.

They were the moſt mortifying Sight I ever beheld, and the Women more horrible than the Men. Beſides the uſual Deformities in extreme old Age, they acquired an additional Ghaſtlineſs in Proportion to their Number of Years, which is not to be deſcribed; and among half a dozen, I ſoon diſtinguiſhed which was the eldeſt, although there was not above a Century, or two between them.

The Reader will eaſily believe, that from what I had heard and ſeen, my keen Appetite for Perpetuity of Life was much abated. I grew heartily aſhamed of the pleaſing Viſions I had formed, and thought no Tyrant could invent a Death into which I would not run with Pleaſure from ſuch a Life. The King heard of all that had paſſed betwen me and my Friends upon this Occaſion, and rallied me very pleaſantly, wiſhing I would ſend a Couple of *Struldbruggs* to my own Country, to arm our People againſt the Fear of Death; but this it ſeems is forbidden by the fundamental Laws of the Kingdom, or elſe I ſhould have been well content with the Trouble and Expence of tranſporting them.

I could not but agree that the Laws of this Kingdom, relating to the *Struldbruggs*, were founded upon the ſtrongeſt Reaſons, and ſuch as any other Country would be under the Neceſſity of enacting in the like Circumſtances. Otherwiſe, as Avarice is the neceſſary Conſequent of old Age, thoſe Immortals would in time become Proprietors of the whole Nation, and engroſs the civil Power, which for want of Abilities to manage, muſt end in the Ruin of the Publick.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

The Author leaves Luggnagg, *and ſails to* Japan. *From thence he returns in a* Dutch *Ship to* Amſterdam, *and from* Amſterdam *to* England.

I Thought this Account of the *Struldbruggs* might be ſome Entertainment to the Reader, becauſe it ſeems to be a little out of the common Way; at leaſt, I do not remember to have met the like in any Book of Travels that hath come to my Hands: And if I am deceived, my Excuſe muſt be, that it is neceſſary for Travellers, who deſcribe the ſame Country, very often to agree in dwelling on the ſame Particulars, without deſerving the Cenſure of having borrowed or tranſcribed from thoſe who wrote before them.

There is indeed a perpetual Commerce between this Kingdom and the great Empire of *Japan*; and it is very probable that the *Japaneſe* Authors may have given ſome Account of the *Struldbruggs*; but my Stay in *Japan* was ſo ſhort, and I was ſo intirely a Stranger to that Language, that I was not qualified to make any Enquiries. But I hope the *Dutch*, upon this Notice, will be curious and able enough to ſupply my Defects.

His Majeſty having often preſſed me to accept ſome Employment in this Court, and finding me abſolutely determined to return to my native Country, was pleaſed to give me his Licence to depart, and honoured me with a Letter of Recommendation, under his own Hand, to the Emperor of *Japan*. He likewiſe preſented me with four hundred forty four large Pieces of Gold (this Nation delighted in even Numbers) and a red Diamond, which I ſold in *England* for eleven hundred Pounds.

On the ſixth Day of *May*, 1709, I took a ſolemn Leave of his Majeſty, and all my Friends. This Prince was ſo gracious, as to order a Guard to conduct me to *Glanguenſtald*, which is a Royal Port to the South-Weſt part of the Iſland. In ſix Days I found a Veſſel ready to carry me to *Japan*, and ſpent fifteen

Days

Days in the Voyage. We landed at a ſmall Port-Town called *Xamoſchi*, ſituated on the South-Eaſt part of *Japan*; the Town lies on the weſtern Point, where there is a narrow Streight, leading Northward into a long Arm of the Sea, upon the North-Weſt part of which, *Yedo*, the Metropolis, ſtands. At landing, I ſhewed the Cuſtom-Houſe Officers my Letter from the King of *Luggnagg* to his Imperial Majeſty. They knew the Seal perfectly well; it was as broad as the Palm of my Hand. The Impreſſion was, *A King liſting up a lame Beggar from the Earth.* The Magiſtrates of the Town hearing of my Letter, received me as a Publick Miniſter; they provided me with Carriages and Servants, and bore my Charges to *Yedo*, where I was admitted to an Audience, and delivered my Letter, which was opened with great Ceremony, and explained to the Emperor by an Interpreter, who then gave me Notice by his Majeſtys Order, that I ſhould ſignify my Requeſt, and whatever it were it ſhould be granted for the Sake of his Royal Brother of *Luggnagg*. This Interpreter was a Perſon employed to tranſact Affairs with the *Hollanders*; he ſoon conjectured by my Countenance that I was an *European*, and therefore repeated his Majeſty's Commands in *Low Dutch*, which he ſpoke perfectly well. I anſwer'd, (as I had before determined,) that I was a *Dutch* Merchant ſhipwrecked in a very remote Country, from whence I travelled by Sea and Land to *Luggnagg*, and then took Shipping for *Japan*, where I knew my Countrymen often traded, and with ſome of theſe I hoped to get an Opportunity of returning into *Europe*: I therefore moſt humbly entreated his Royal Favour to give Order, that I ſhould be conducted in Safety to *Nangaſac*: To this I added another Petition, that for the Sake of my Patron the King of *Luggnagg*, his Majeſty would condeſcend to excuſe my performing the Ceremony impoſed on my Countrymen of *trampling upon the Crucifix*, becauſe I had been thrown into his Kingdom by my Misfortunes, without any Intention of Trading. When this latter Petition was interpreted to the Emperor, he ſeemed a little ſurprized, and ſaid, he believed I was the firſt of my Countrymen who ever made any Scruple in this Point, and that he began to doubt whether I was a real *Hollander*, or no, but rather ſuſpected I muſt be a CHRISTIAN. However, for the Reaſons I had offered, but chiefly to gratify the King of *Luggnagg*, by an uncommon Mark

Mark of his Favour, he would comply with the *Singularity* of my Humour; but the Affair must be managed with Dexterity, and his Officers should be commanded to let me pass, as it were, by Forgetfulness. For he assured me, that if the Secret should be discovered by my Countrymen, the *Dutch*, they would cut my Throat in the Voyage. I returned my Thanks by the Interpreter, for so unusual a Favour, and some Troops being at that Time on their March to *Nangasac*, the Commanding Officer had Orders to convey me safe thither, with particular Instructions about the Business of the *Crucifix*.

On the 9*th* Day of *June*, 1709, I arrived at *Nangasac*, after a very long and troublesome Journey. I soon fell into Company of some *Dutch* Sailors, belonging to the *Amboyna* of *Amsterdam*, a stout Ship of 450 Tons. I had lived long in *Holland*, pursuing my Studies at *Leyden*, and I spoke *Dutch* well. The Seamen soon knew from whence I came last; they were curious to enquire into my Voyages and Course of Life. I made up a Story as short and probable as I could, but concealed the greatest part. I knew many Persons in *Holland*; I was able to invent Names for my Parents, whom I pretended to be obscure People in the Province of *Guelderland*. I would have given the Captain [one *Theodorous Vangrult*] what he pleased to ask for my Voyage to *Holland*; but understanding I was a Surgeon, he was contented to take half the usual Rate, on Condition that I would serve him in the Way of my Calling. Before we took Shipping, I was often ask'd by some of the Crew, whether I had performed the Ceremony above-mentioned: I evaded the Question by general Answers, that I had satisfied the Emperor and Court in all Particulars. However, a malicious Rogue of a Skipper went to an Officer, and pointing to me, told him, I had not yet *trampled on the Crucifix*; But the other, who had received Instructions to let me pass, gave the Rascal twenty strokes on the Shoulders with a Bamboo, after which I was no more troubled with such Questions.

Nothing happened worth mentioning in this Voyage. We sailed with a fair Wind to the *Cape of Good Hope*, where we staid only to take in fresh Water. On the 16*th* of *April* we arrived safe to *Amsterdam*, having lost only three Men

by Sickneſs in the Voyage, and a fourth who fell from the Fore-maſt into the Sea, not far from the Coaſt of *Guinea*. From *Amſterdam* I ſoon after ſet Sail for *England*, in a ſmall Veſſel belonging to that City.

On the 10*th* of *April*, 1710, we put in at the *Downs*. I landed the next Morning, and ſaw once more my native Country, after an Abſence of five Years and ſix Months compleat. I went ſtrait to *Redriff*, where I arrived the ſame Day at two in the Afternoon, and found my Wife and Family in good Health.

The End of the Third Part.

TRAVELS.

TRAVELS.

PART IV.

A Voyage to the HOUYHNHNMS.

CHAP. I.

The Author ſets out as Captain of a Ship. His Men conſpire againſt him, confine him a long Time to his Cabin, ſet him on ſhore in an unknown Land. He travels up in the Country. The Yahoos *a ſtrange ſort of Animal deſcribed. The Author meets two* Houyhnhnms.

I Continued at home with my Wife and Children about five Months in a very happy Condition, if I could have learned the Leſſon of knowing when I was well. I left my poor Wife big with Child, and accepted an advantageous Offer made me to be Captain of the *Adventure*, a ſtout Merchant-Man of 350 Tons: For I underſtood Navigation well; and being grown weary of my Employment at Sea, which, however, I could exerciſe upon Occaſion, I took a ſkilful young Man

Man of that Calling, one *Robert Pureſoy*, into my Ship. We ſet ſail from *Portſmouth* upon the 2*d* Day of *Auguſt*, 1710; on the fourteenth we met with Captain *Pocock* of *Briſtol*, at *Tenariff*, who was going to the Bay of *Campechy*, to cut Log-wood. On the ſixteenth he was parted from us by a Storm: I heard ſince my Return, that his Ship foundered, and none eſcaped, but one Cabin-Boy. He was an honeſt Man, and a good Sailor; but a little too poſitive in his own Opinions, which was the Cauſe of his Deſtruction, as it hath been of ſeveral others. For if he had followed my Advice, he might have been ſafe at Home with his Family at this Time as well as myſelf.

I had ſeveral Men died in my Ship of Calentures, ſo that I was forced to get Recruits out of *Barbadoes*, and the *Leeward Iſlands*, where I touched by the Direction of the Merchants who employed me, which I had ſoon too much Cauſe to repent; for I found afterwards, that moſt of them had been Bucaneers. I had fifty Hands on board, and my Orders were, that I ſhould trade with the *Indians* in the *South-Sea*, and make what Diſcoveries I could. Theſe Rogues whom I had picked up debauched my other Men, and they all formed a Conſpiracy to ſeize the Ship and ſecure me; which they did one Morning, ruſhing into my Cabin, and binding me Hand and Foot, threatning to throw me over-board, if I offered to ſtir. I told them I was their Priſoner, and would ſubmit. This they made me ſwear to do, and then they unbound me, only faſtening one of my Legs with a Chain near my Bed, and placed a Centinel at my Door with his Piece charged, who was commanded to ſhoot me dead, if I attempted my Liberty. They ſent me down Victuals and Drink, and took the Government of the Ship to themſelves. Their Deſign was to turn Pyrates, and plunder the *Spaniards*, which they could not do, 'till they got more Men. But firſt they reſolved to ſell the Goods in the Ship, and then go to *Madagaſcar* for Recruits, ſeveral among them having died ſince my Confinement. They ſailed many Weeks, and traded with the *Indians*, but I knew not what Courſe they took, being kept a cloſe Priſoner in my Cabin, and expecting nothing leſs than to be murthered, as they often threatned me.

Upon the ninth Day of *May*, 1711, one *James Welch* came down to my Ca-

bin,

bin, and ſaid he had Orders from the Captain to ſet me a-ſhore. I expoſtulated with him, but in vain; neither would he ſo much as tell me who their new Captan was. They forced me into the Long-boat, letting me put on my beſt Suit of Cloaths, which were as good as new, and a ſmall Bundle of Linnen; but no Arms except my Hanger; and they were ſo civil as not to ſearch my Pockets, into which I conveyed what Money I had, with ſome other little Neceſſaries. They rowed about a League, and then ſet me down on a Strand. I deſired them to tell me what Country it was. They all ſwore, they knew no more than myſelf; but ſaid, that the Captain (as they called him) was reſolved, after they had ſold the Lading, to get rid of me in the firſt Place where they could diſcover Land. They puſhed off immediately, adviſing me to make Haſte, for fear of being overtaken by the Tide, and ſo bade me farewel.

In this deſolate Condition I advanced forward, and ſoon got upon firm Ground, where I ſat down on a Bank to reſt myſelf, and conſider what I had beſt to do. When I was a little refreſhed, I went up into the Country, reſolving to deliver myſelf to the firſt Savages I ſhould meet, and purchaſe my Life from them by ſome Bracelets, Glaſs-Rings and other Toys, which Sailors uſually provide themſelves with in thoſe Voyages, and whereof I had ſome about me: The Land was divided by long rows of Trees, not regularly planted, but naturally growing; there was great plenty of Graſs, and ſeveral Fields of Oats. I walked very circumſpectly for fear of being ſurprized, or ſuddenly ſhot with an Arrow from behind or on either Side. I fell into a beaten Road, where I ſaw many Tracks of human Feet, and ſome of Cows, but moſt of Horſes. At laſt I beheld ſeveral Animals in a Field, and one or two of the ſame kind ſitting in Trees. The Shape was very ſingular, and deformed, which a little diſcompoſed me, ſo that I lay down behind a Thicket to obſerve them better. Some of them coming forward near the Place where I lay, gave me an Opportunity of diſtinctly marking their Form. Their Heads and Breaſts were covered with a thick Hair, ſome frizled and others lank; they had Beards like Goats, and a long Ridge of Hair down their Backs, and the fore Parts of their Legs and Feet; but the reſt of their

Bodies were bear, ſo that I might ſee their Skins, which were of a brown Buff Colour. They had no Tails, nor any Hair at all on their Buttocks, except about the *Anus*, which I preſume, Nature had placed there to defend them as they ſate on the Ground; for that Poſture they uſed as well as lying down, and often ſtood on their hind Feet. The climbed high Trees as nimble as a Squirrel, for they had ſtrong extended Claws before and behind; terminating in ſharp Points hooked. They would often ſpring, and bound, and leap with prodigious Agility. The Females were not ſo large as the Males, they had long lank Hair on their Faces, nor any Thing more than a ſort of Down on the reſt of their Bodies, except about the *Anus* and *Pudenda*. Their Dugs hung between their Fore-feet, and often reached almoſt to the Ground as they walked. The Hair of both Sexes was of ſeveral Colours, brown, red, black, and yellow. Upon the whole, I never beheld in all my Travels ſo diſagreeable an Animal, nor one againſt which I naturally conceived ſo ſtrong an Antipathy. So that thinking I had ſeen enough, full of Contempt and Averſion, I got up and purſued the beaten Road, hoping it might direct me to the Cabin of ſome *Indian*. I had not gone far, when I met one of theſe Creatures full in my Way, and coming up directly to me. The ugly Monſter, when he ſaw me, diſtorted ſeveral Ways every Feature of his Viſage, and ſtarted as at an Object he had never ſeen before; then approaching nearer, lifted up his Fore-Paw, whether out of Curioſity or Miſchief I could not tell. But I drew my Hanger, and gave him a good Blow with the flat Side of it, for I durſt not ſtrike him with the Edge, fearing the Inhabitants might be provoked againſt me, if I ſhould come to know, that I had killed or maimed any of their Cattle. When the Beaſt felt the Smart, he drew Back, and roared ſo loud, that a Herd of at leaſt forty came flocking about me from the next Field, howling and making odious Faces; but I ran to the Body of a Tree, and leaning my Back againſt it, kept them off by waving my Hanger. Several of this curſed Brood getting hold of the Branches behind, leap'd up in the Tree, from whence they began to diſcharge their Excrements on my Head: However, I eſcaped pretty well, by ſticking cloſe to the Stem of the Tree but was almoſt ſtifled,

with

with the Filth, which fell about me on every Side.

In the midſt of this Diſtreſs, I obſerved them all to run away on a ſudden as faſt as they could, at which I ventured to leave the Tree, and purſued the Road, wondring what it was that could put them into this Fright. But looking on my Left Hand, I ſaw a Horſe walking ſoftly in the Field; which my Perſecutors having ſooner diſcovered, was the Cauſe of their Flight. The Horſe ſtartled a little when he came near me, but ſoon recovering himſelf look'd full in my Face with manifeſt Tokens of Wonder: He view'd my Hands and Feet, walking round me ſeveral times. I would have purſued my Journey, but he placed himſelf directly in the Way; yet looking with a very mild Aſpect, never offering the leaſt Violence. We ſtood gazing at each other for ſome Time: At laſt I took the Boldneſs to reach my Hand towards his Neck, with a Deſign to ſtroak it, uſing the common Style and Whiſtle of Jockies when they are a going to handle a ſtrange Horſe. But this Animal ſeeming to receive my Civilities with Diſdain, ſhook his Head, and bent his Brows, ſoftly raiſing up his right Fore-Foot to remove my Hand. Then he neighed three or four times, but in ſo different a Cadence, that I almoſt began to think he was ſpeaking to himſelf in ſome Language of his own.

While he and I were thus employed, another Horſe came up; who applying himſelf to the firſt in a very formal Manner, they gently ſtruck each other's right Hoof before, neighing ſeveral times by Turns, and varying the Sound, which ſeemed to be almoſt articulate. They went ſome Paces off, as if it were to conſer together, walking ſide by ſide backward and forward, like Perſons deliberating upon ſome Affair of Weight, but often turning their Eyes towards me, as it were, to watch that I might not eſcape. I was amazed to ſee ſuch Actions and Behaviours in Brute Beaſts, and concluded with myſelf, that if the Inhabitants of this Country were endued with a proportionable Degree of Reaſon, they muſt needs be the wiſeſt People upon Earth. This Thought gave me ſo much Comfort, that I reſolved to go forward until I could diſcover ſome Houſe or Village, or meet with any of the Natives, leaving the two Horſes to diſcourſe together as they pleaſed. But the firſt, who was a Dapple-Grey, obſerving me to ſteal off,

neighed

neighed after me in so expressive a Tone, that I fancied myself to understand what he meant; whereupon I turned back, and came near him, to expect his farther commands. But concealing my Fear as much as I could, for I began to be in some Pain, how this Adventure might terminate; and the Reader will easily believe I did not much like my present Situation.

The two Horses came up close to me, looking with great Earnestness upon my Face and Hands. The grey Steed rubbed my Hat all round with his Right fore Hoof, and discomposed it so much, that I was forced to adjust it better, by taking it off, and settling it again; whereat both he and his Companion (who was a brown Bay) appeared to be much surprized; the latter felt the Lappet of my Coat, and finding it to hang loose about me, they both looked with new Signs of Wonder. He stroaked my Right Hand, seeming to admire the Softness and Colour; but he squeezed it so hard between his Hoof and Pastern, that I was forced to roar; after which they both touched me with all possible Tenderness. They were under great Perplexity about my Shoes and Stockings, which they felt very often, neighing to each other, and using various Gestures, not unlike those of a Philosopher, when he would attempt to solve some new and difficult Phænomenon.

Upon the whole, the Behaviour of these Animals was so orderly and rational, so acute and judicious, that I at last concluded, they must needs be Magicians, who had thus metamorphosed themselves upon some Design, and seeing a Stranger in the Way were resolved to divert themselves with him; or perhaps were really amazed at the Sight of a Man so very different in Habit, Feature and Complection, from those who might probably live in so remote a Climate. Upon the Strength of this Reasoning, I ventured to adress them in the following Manner: 'Gentlemen, If you be Conjurers, as I have good Cause to believe, 'you can understand any Language; therefore I make bold to let your Worships 'know, that I am a poor distressed *English* Man, driven by Misfortunes upon 'your Coast, and entreat one of you to let 'me ride upon your Back, as if you were 'a real Horse, to some House or Village, 'where I can be relieved. In return of 'which Favour I will make you a Present

sent of this Knife and Bracelet, (taking them out of my Pocket.") The two Creatures stood silent while I spoke, seeming to listen with great Attention; and when I had ended they neighed frequently towards each other, as if they were engaged in serious Conversation. I plainly observed, that their Language expressed the Passions very well, and their Words might with little Pains be resolved into an Alphabet more easily than the *Chinese*.

I could frequently distinguish the Word *Yahoo*, which was repeated by each of them several times; and although it was impossible for me to conjecture what it meant; yet while the two Horses were busy in Conversation, I endeavoured to practise this Word upon my Tongue; and as soon as they were silent, I boldly pronounced *Yahoo* in a loud Voice, imitating at the same time, as near as I could, the Neighing of a Horse; at which they were both visibly surprized, and the Grey repeated the same Word twice, as if he meant to teach me the right Accent, wherein I spoke after him as well as I could, and found myself perceivably to improve every time, though very far from any Degree or Perfection. Then the Bay tried me with a second Word much harder to be pronounced; but reducing it to the *English Orthography*, may be spelt thus, *Houyhnhnms*. I did not succeed in this so well as in the former, but after two or three farther Trials, I had better Fortune, and they both appeared amazed at my Capacity.

After some farther Discourse, which I then conjectured might relate to me, the two Friends took their Leaves with the same Compliment of striking each other's Hoof; and the Grey made me Signs that I should walk before them, wherein I thought it prudent to comply 'till I could find a better Director. When I offered to slacken my Pace, he would cry *Hhuun, Hhuun*; I guessed his Meaning, and gave him to understand, as well as I could, that I was weary, and not able to walk faster; upon which, he would stand a while to let me rest.

CHAP. II.

The Author conducted by a Houyhnhnm *to his House. The House described. The Author's Reception. The Food of the* Houyhnhnms. *The Author in Distress for Want of Meat is at last relieved. His Manner of feeding in this Country.*

HAVING travelled about three Miles, we came to a long kind of Building, made of Timber, stuck in the Ground, and watled acrosS; the Roof was low, and covered with Straw. I now began to be a little comforted, and took out some Toys, which Travellers usual carry for Presents to the Savage *Indians* of *America* and other Parts, in Hopes the People of the House would be thereby encouraged to receive me kindly. The Horse made me a Sign to go in first; it was a large Room with a smooth Clay Floor, and a Rack and Manger extending the whole Length on one Side. There were three Nags, and two Mares not eating, but some of them sitting down upon their Hams, which I very much wonder'd at; but wonder'd more to see the rest employed in domestick Business. They seemed but ordinary Cattle, however, this confirmed my first Opinion, that a People who could so far civilize brute Animals, must needs excel in Wisdom all the Nations of the World. The Grey came in just after, and thereby prevented any ill Treatment, which the others might have given me. He neighed to them several Times in a Style of Authority, and received Answers.

Beyond this Room there were three others, reaching the Length of the House, to which you passed thro' three Doors opposite to each other, in the Manner of a Vista; we went through the second Room towards the third, here the Grey walked in first, beckoning to me to attend: I waited in the second Room, and got ready my Presents for the Master and Mistress of the House: They were two Knives, three Bracelets of false Pearl, a small Looking-Glass and a Bead Necklace. The Horse neighed three or four times, and I wiated to hear some Answers in a human Voice, but I observed no other

Returns

Returns than in the ſame Dialect, only one or two a little ſhriller than his. I began to think that this Houſe muſt belong to ſome Perſon of great Note among them, becauſe there appeared ſo much Ceremony before I could gain Admittance. But, that a Man of Quality ſhould be ſerved all by Horſes, was beyond my Comprehenſion. I feared my Brain was diſturbed by my Sufferings and Misfortunes: I rouzed myſelf and looked about me in the Room where I was left alone, this was furniſhed like the firſt, only after a more elegant Manner. I rubbed my Eyes often, but the ſame Objects ſtill accrued. I pinched my Arms and Sides, to awake myſelf, hoping I might be in a Dream. I then abſolutely concluded that all theſe Appearances could be nothing elſe but Nectomancy and Magick. But I had no Time to purſue theſe Reflections; for the grey Horſe came to the Door, and made me a Sign to follow him into the third Room, where I ſaw a very comely Mare, together with a Colt and Foſe, ſitting upon their Haunches, upon Mats of Straw, not unartfully made, and perfectly neat and clean.

The Mare, ſoon after my Entrance, roſe from her Mat, and coming up cloſe, after having nicely obſerved my Hands and Face, gave me a moſt contemptuous Look; then turning to the Horſe, I heard the Word *Yahoo* often repeated betwixt them; the Meaning of which Word I could not then comprehend, although it were the firſt I had learned to pronounce; but I was ſoon better informed, to my everlaſting Mortification: For the Horſe beckoning to me with his Head, and repeating the Word *Hhuum*, *Hhuum*, as he did upon the Road, which I underſtood was to attend him, led me out into a kind of Court, where was another Building at ſome Diſtance from the Houſe. Here we entered, and I ſaw three of theſe deteſtable Creatures whom I firſt met after my Landing, feeding upon Roots, and the Fleſh of ſome Animals, which I afterwards found to be that of Aſſes and Dogs, and now and then a Cow dead by Accident or Diſeaſe. They were all tyed by the Neck with ſtrong Wyths, faſtened to a Beam; they held their Food betwen their Claws of their Fore-feet, and tore it with their Teeth.

The Maſter Horſe ordered a Sor-

rel

rel Nag, one of his Servants, to untie the largeſt of theſe Animals, and take him into the Yard. The Beaſt and I were brought cloſe together; and our Countenances diligently compared, both by Maſter and Servant, who thereupon repeated ſeveral times the Word *Yahoo*. My Horror and Aſtoniſhment are not to be deſcribed, when I obſerved, in this abominable Animal, a perfect human Figure; the Face of it indeed was flat and broad, the Noſe depreſſed, the Lips large, and the Mouth wide. But theſe Differences are common to all ſavage Nations, where the Lineaments of the Countenances are diſtorted by the Natives ſuffering their Infants to lie grovelling on the Earth, or by carrying them on their Backs, nuzzling with their Face againſt the Mother's Shoulders. The Fore-feet of the *Yahoo* differed from my Hands in nothing elſe but the Length of the Nails, the Coarſeneſs and Browneſs of the Palms, and the Hairineſs on the Backs. There was the ſame Reſemblance between our Feet, with the ſame Difference, which I knew very well, tho' the Horſes did not, becauſe of my Shoes and Stockings; the ſame in every part our of Bodies, except as to Hairineſs and Colour, which I have already deſcribed.

The great Difficulty that ſeemed to ſtick with the two Horſes, was, to ſee the reſt of my Body ſo very different from that of a *Yahoo*, for which I was obliged to my Cloaths, whereof they had no Conception: The Sorrel Nag offered me a Root, which he held (after their Manner, as we ſhall deſcribe in its proper Place) between his Hoof and Paſtern; I took it in my Hand, and having ſmelt it, returned it to him again as civilly as I could. He brought out of the *Yahoo*'s Kennel a Piece of Aſs's Fleſh, but it ſmelt ſo offenſively that I turned from it with loathing; he then threw it to the *Yahoo*, by whom it was greedily devoured. He afterwards ſhewed me a Whiſp of Hay, and a Fetlock full of Oats; but I ſhook my Head, to ſignify, that neither of theſe were Food for me. And indeed, I now apprehended that I muſt abſolutely ſtarve, if I did not get to ſome of my own Species: For as to thoſe filthy *Yahoos*, although there were few greater Lovers of Mankind at that time than myſelf; yet I confeſs I never ſaw any ſenſitive Being ſo deteſtable on all Accounts; and the more

I came

I came near them, the more hateful they grew, while I ſtaid in that Country. This the Maſter Horſe obſerved by my Behaviour, and therefore ſent the *Yahoo* back to his Kennel. He then put his Forehoof to his Mouth, at which I was much ſurpriz'd, although he did it with Eaſe, and with a Motion that appeared perfectly natural, and made other Signs to know what I would eat; but I could not return him ſuch an Anſwer as he was able to apprehend; and if he had underſtood me, I did not ſee how it was poſſible to contrive any Way for finding myſelf Nouriſhment. While we were thus engaged, I obſerving a Cow paſſing by, whereupon I pointed to her, and expreſſed a Deſire to let me go and milk her. This had its Effect; for he led me back into the Houſe, and ordered a Mare-Servant to open a Room, where a good ſtore of Milk lay in earthen and wooden Veſſels, after a very orderly and cleanly Manner. She gave me a large Bowl full of which I drank very heartily, and found myſelf well refreſhed.

About Noon I ſaw coming towards the Houſe a kind of Vehicle drawn like a Sledge, by four *Yahoos*. There was in it an old Steed, who ſeemed to be of Quality, he alighted with his Hind-feet forward, having by Accident got a Hurt in his left Fore-Foot. He came to dine with our Horſe, who received him with great Civility. They dined in the beſt Room, and had Oats boiled in Milk for the ſecond Courſe, which the old Horſe eat warm, but the reſt cold. Their Mangers were placed circular in the middle of the Room, and divided into ſeveral Partitions, round which they ſate on their Haunches upon Bauſſes of Straw. In the Middle was a large Rack with Angles anſwering to every Partition of the Manger. So that each Horſe and Mare eat their own Hay, and their own Maſh of Oats and Milk, with much Decency and Regularity. The Behaviour of the young Colt and Foal appeared very modeſt, and that of the Maſter and Miſtreſs extreamly chearful and complaiſant to their Gueſt The Grey ordered me to ſtand by him, and much Diſcourſe paſſed between him and his Friend concerning me, as I found by the Stranger's often looking on me, and the frequent Repetition of the Word *Yahoo*.

I happened to wear my Gloves, which the Maſter Grey obſerved, ſeeming per-

plexed, discovering Signs of Wonder what I had done to my Fore-Feet; he put his Hoof three or four times to them, as if he would signify, that I should reduce them to their former Shape, which I presently did, pulling off both my Gloves, and putting them in my Pocket. This occasioned further Talk, and I saw the Company was pleased with my Behaviour, whereof I soon found the good Effects. I was ordered to speak the few Words I understood, and while they were at Dinner, the Master taught me the Names for Oats, Milk, Fire, Water, and some others; which I could readily pronounce after him, having from my Youth a great Facility in learning Languages.

When Dinner was done, the Master Horse took me aside, and by Signs and Wonders made me understand the Concern that he was in, that I had nothing to eat. Oats in their Tongue are called *Hlunnh*. This Word I pronounced two or three times; for although I had refused them at first, yet, upon second Thoughts I considered that I could contrive to make of them a kind of Bread, which might be sufficient with Milk, to keep me alive, 'till I could make my Escape to some other Country, and to Creatures of my own Species. The Horse immediately ordered a white Mare-servant of his Family to bring me a good Quantity of Oats in a sort of wooden Tray. These I heated before the Fire as well as I could, and rubbed them untill the Husks came off, which I made a Shift to winnow from the Grain; I ground and beat them between two Stones, then took Water, and made them into a Paste or Cake, which I toasted at the Fire, and eat warm with Milk. It was at first a very insipid Diet, though common enough in many Parts of *Europe*, but grew tolerable by Time; and having been often reduced to hard Fare in my Life, this was not the first Experiment I had made how easily Nature is satisfied. And I cannot but observe, that I never had one Hour's Sickness while I staid in this Island. 'Tis true, I sometimes made a Shift to catch a Rabbet, or Bird, by Springes made of *Yahoos* Hairs; and I often gathered wholesome Herbs, which I boiled, or eat as Sallads with my Bread, and now and then, for a Rarity, I made a little Butter and drank the Whey. I was at first at a great Loss for Salt; but Custom soon reconciled the Want of it; and I am confident that the frequent Use

of

of Salt among us, is an effect of Luxury, and was first introduced only as a Provocative to drink; except where it is necessary for preserving of Flesh in long Voyages, or in Places remote from great Markets. For we observe no Animal to be fond of it but Man: And as to myself, when I left this Country, it was a great while before I could endure the Taste of it in any thing that I eat.

This is enough to say upon the Subject of my Diet, wherewith other Travellers fill their Books, as if the Readers were personally concerned, whether we fare well or ill. However it was necessary to mention this Matter lest the World should think it impossible that I could find Sustenance for three Years in such a Country, and among such Inhabitants.

When it grew towards Evening, the Master Horse ordered a Place for me to lodge in; it was but six Yards from the House and separated from the Stable of the *Yahoos*. Here I got some Straw, and covering myself with my own Cloaths, slept very sound. But I was in a short Time better accommodated, as the Reader shall know hereafter, when I come to treat more particularly about my Way of Living.

CHAP. III.

The Author studious to learn the Language, the Houyhnhnm *his Master assists in teaching him. The Language described. Several* Houyhnhnms *of Quality come out of Curiosity to see the Author. He gives his Master a short Account of his Voyage.*

MY principal Endeavour was to learn the Language, which my Master (for I so I shall henceforth call him) and his Children, and every Servant of his house were desirous to teach me. For they looked upon it as a Prodigy, that a brute Animal should discover such Marks of a rational Creature. I pointed to every thing, and enquired the Name of it, which I wrote down in my

Journal-Book

Journal-Book when I was alone, and corrected my bad Accent, by desiring those of the Family to pronounce it often. In this Employment, a sorrel Nag, one of the under Servants, was ready to assist me.

In speaking, they pronounc'd through the Nose and Throat, and their Language approaches nearest to the *High-Dutch* or *German*, of any I know in *Europe*; but is much more graceful and significant. The Emperor *Charles* V. made almost the same Observation, when he said, That if he was to speak to his Horse it should be in *High-Dutch*.

The Curiosity and Impatience of my Master were so great, that he spent many Hours of his leisure to instruct me. He was convinced (as he afterwards told me) that I must be a *Yahoo*, but my Teachableness, Civility, and Cleanliness astonished him; which were Qualities altogether so opposite to those Animals. He was most perplexed about my Cloaths, reasoning sometimes with himself, whether they were a part of my Body; for I never pulled them off 'till the Family were asleep, and got them on before they waked in the Morning. My Master was eager to learn from whence I came, how I acquired those appearances of Reason, which I discovered in all my Actions, and to know my Story from my own Mouth, which he hoped he should soon do by the great Proficiency I made in learning and pronouncing their Words and Sentences. To help my Memory, I formed all I learned into the *English* Alphabet, and writ the Words down with the Translations. This last, after some time, I ventured to do in my Master's Presence. It cost me much trouble to explain to him what I was doing; for the Inhabitants have not the least Idea of Books and Literature.

In about ten Weeks time I was able to understand most of his Questions, and in three Months could give him some tolerable Answers. He was extremely curious to know from what part of the Country I came, and how I was taught to imitate a rational Creature, because the *Yahoos*, (whom he saw I exactly resembled in my Head, Hands, and Face, that were only visible) with some appearance of Cunning, and the strongest Disposition to Mischief, were observed to be the most unteachable of all Brutes. I answered, That I came over the Sea from a far

a fat Place, with many others of my own kind, in a great hollow Veſſel made of the Bodies of Trees. That my Companions forced me to land on this Coaſt, and then left me to ſhift to myſelf. It was with ſome Difficulty, and by the help of many Signs, that I brought him to underſtand me. He replied, That I muſt needs be miſtaken, or that I *ſaid the Thing which was not.* (For they have no Word in their Language to expreſs Lying or Falſehood.) He knew it was impoſſible, that there could be a Country beyond the Sea, or that a Parcel of Brutes could move a wooden Veſſel whither they pleaſed upon Water. He was ſure no *Houyhnhnm* alive could make ſuch a Veſſel, nor would truſt *Yahoos* to manage it.

The Word *Houyhnhnm*, in their Tongue ſignifies a *Horſe*, and in its Etymology, *The Perfection of Nature.* I told my Maſter, that I was at a loſs for Expreſſion, but would improve as well as I could; and hoped in a ſhort Time I ſhould be able to tell him Wonders: He was pleaſed to direct his own Mare, his Colt and Foal, and the Servants of the Family to take all Opportunities of inſtructing me, and every Day for two or three Hours, he was at the ſame Pains himſelf: Several Horſes and Mares of Quality in the Neighbourhood came often to our Houſe, upon the Report ſpread of a wonderful *Yahoo*, that could ſpeak like a *Houyhnhnm*, and ſeemed in his Words and Actions to diſcover ſome glimmerings of Reaſon. Theſe delighted to converſe with me; they put many Queſtions, and received ſuch Anſwers, as I was able to return. By all theſe Advantages, I made ſo great a Progreſs, that in five Months from my Arrival, I underſtood whatever was ſpoke, and could expreſs myſelf tolerably well.

The *Houyhnhnms* who came to viſit my Maſter, out of a Deſign of ſeeing and talking with me, could hardly believe me to be a right *Yahoo*, becauſe my Body had a different Covering from others of my Kind. They were aſtoniſhed to obſerve me without the uſual Hair or Skin, except on my Head, Face, and Hands; but I diſcovered that Secret to my Maſter, upon an Accident that happened about a Fortnight before.

I have already told the Reader, that every Night when the Family were gone to Bed, it was my Cuſtom to ſtrip, and

cover myself with my Cloaths: It happened one Morning early, that my Master sent for me, by the Sorrel Nag, who was his Valet; when he came, I was fast asleep, my Cloaths fallen off on one Side, and my Shirt above my Waist. I waked at the Noise he made, and observed him to deliver his Message in some Disorder; after which he went to my Master, and in a great Fright gave him a very confused Account of what he had seen: This I presently discovered; for going as soon as I was dressed, to pay my Attendance upon his Honour, he asked me the Meaning of what his Servant had reported, that I was not the same Thing when I slept, as I appeared to be at other Times; that his Valet assured him, some part of me was white, and some brown.

I had hitherto concealed the Secret of my Dress, in order to distinguish myself as much as I could from the cursed Race of *Yahoos*; but now I found it in vain to do so any longer. Besides, I considered, that my Cloaths and Shoes would soon wear out, which already were in a declining Condition, and must be supplied by some Contrivance from the Hides of *Yahoos* or other Brutes; whereby the whole Secret would be known: I therefore told my Master, that in the Country from whence I came, those of my kind always covered their Bodies with the Hairs of certain Animals prepared by Art as well for Decency, as to avoid the Inclemencies of Air both hot and cold; of which, as to my own Person I would give him immediate Conviction, if he pleased to command me; only desiring his Excuse, if I did not expose those Parts that Nature taught us to conceal. He said my discourse was strange, but especially the last Part; for he could not understand why Nature should teach us to conceal what Nature had given. That neither himself nor Family were ashamed of any Parts of their Bodies; but, however, I might do as I pleased. Whereupon I first unbuttoned my Coat, and pulled it off. I did the same with my Waistcoat; I drew off my Shoes, Stockings and Breeches. I let my Shirt down to my Waist, and drew up the Bottom fastening it like a Girdle about my Middle to hide my Nakedness.

My Master observed the whole Performance with great Signs of Curiosity and Admiration. He took up all my Cloaths in his Pastern, one Piece after another, and examined them diligently; he

he then ſtroaked my Body very gently, and looked round me ſeveral times, after which he ſaid, it was plain I muſt be a perfect *Yahoo*; but that I differed very much from the reſt of my Species, in the Softneſs and Whiteneſs and Smoothneſs of my Skin, my Want of Hair in ſeveral Parts of my Body, the Shape and Shortneſs of my Claws behind and before, and my Affectation of walking continually on my two hinder Feet. He deſired to ſe no more, and gave me leave to put on my Cloaths again, for I was ſhuddering with Cold.

I expreſſed my Uneaſineſs at his giving me ſo often the Appellation of *Yahoo*, an odious Animal, for which I had ſo utter an Hatred and Contempt. I begged he would forbear applying that Word to me, and take the ſame Order in his Family, and among his Friends whom he ſuffered to ſee me. I requeſted likewiſe, that the Secret of having a falſe Covering to my Body might be known to none but himſelf, at leaſt as long as my preſent Cloathing ſhould laſt; for, as to what the Sorrel Nag his Valet had obſerved, his Honour might command him to conceal it.

All this my Maſter very graciouſly conſented to, and thus the Secret was kept, till my Cloaths began to wear out, which I was forced to ſupply by ſeveral Contrivances, that ſhall hereafter be mentioned. In the mean Time, he deſired I would go on with my utmoſt Diligence to learn their Language, becauſe he was more aſtoniſhed at my Capacity for Speech and Reaſon, than at the Figure of my Body, whether it were covered or no; adding, that he waited with ſome Impatience to hear the Wonders which I promiſed to tell him.

From thenceforward he doubled the Pains he had been at to inſtruct me; he brought me into all Company, and made them treat me with Civility, becauſe as he told me privately, this would put me into good Humour, and make me more diverting.

Every Day when I waited on him, beſides the Trouble he was at in teaching, he would aſk me ſeveral Queſtions concerning myſelf, which I anſwered as well as I could; and by theſe Means he had already received ſome general Ideas, though very imperfect. It would be tedious to relate the ſeveral Steps, by

which

which I advanced to a more regular Converſation: But the firſt Account I gave of myſelf in any Order and Length, was to this Purpoſe:

That I came from a very far Country, as I had already attempted to tell him with about fifty more of my own Species; that we travelled upon the Seas, in a great hollow Veſſel made of Wood, and larger than his Honour's Houſe. I deſcribed the Ship to him in the beſt Terms I could, and explained by the help of my Handkerchief diſplayed, how it was driven forward by the Wind. That upon a Quarrel among us, I was ſet on Shore on this Coaſt, where I walked forward without knowing whither, 'till he deliver'd me from the Perſecution of thoſe execrable *Yahoos*. He aſked me, who made the Ship, and how it was poſſible that the *Houyhnhnms* of my Country would leave it to the Management of Brutes? My Anſwer was, that I durſt proceed no farther in my Relation, unleſs he would give me his Word and Honour that he would not be offended, and then I would tell him the Wonders I had ſo often promiſed. He agreed; and I went on by aſſuring him, that the Ship was made by Creatures like myſelf, who in all the Countries I had travelled as well as in my own, where the only governing, rational Animals; and that upon my Arrival hither, I was as much aſtoniſhed to ſee the *Houyhnhnms* act like rational Beings, as he or his Friends could be in finding ſome Marks of Reaſon in a Creature he was pleaſed to call a *Yahoo*, to which I owned my Reſemblance in every Part, but could not account for their degenerate and Brutal Nature. I ſaid farther, that if good Fortune ever reſtored me to my Native Country, to relate my Travels hither as I reſolved to do, every-body would believe that I *ſaid the Thing which was not*; that I invented the Story out of my own Head; and with all poſſible Reſpect to himſelf, his Family, and Friends, and under his Promiſe of not being offended, our Countrymen would hardly think it probable, that a *Houyhnhnm* ſhould be the preſiding Creature of a Nation, and a *Yahoo* the Brute.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

The Houyhnhnms *Notion of Truth and Falſhood. The Author's Diſcourſe diſapproved by his Maſter. The Author gives a more particular Account of himſelf, and the Accidents of his Voyage.*

MY Maſter heard me with great Appearances of Uneaſineſs in his Countenance, becauſe *doubting* or *not believing*, are ſo little known in this Country, that the Inhabitants cannot tell how to behave themſelves under ſuch Circumſtances. And I remember in frequent Diſcourſes with my Maſter concerning the Nature of Manhood in other Parts of the World, having Occaſion to talk of *Lying*, and *falſe Repreſentation*, it was with much Difficulty that he comprehended what I meant, although he had otherwiſe a moſt acute Judgment. For he argued thus: That the Uſe of Speech was to make us underſtand one another, and to receive Information of Facts; now if any one *ſaid the Thing that was not*, thoſe Ends were defeated; becauſe I cannot properly be ſaid to underſtand him, and I am ſo far from receiving Information, that he leaves me worſe than in Ignorance, for I am led to believe a Thing *black* when it is white, and *ſhort* when it is *long*. And theſe were all the Notions he had concerning that Faculty of *Lying*, ſo perfectly well underſtood among human Creatures.

To return from this Digreſſion; when I aſſerted that the *Yahoos* where the only governing Animal in my Country, which my Maſter ſaid was altogether paſt his Conception, he deſired to know whether we had any *Houyhnhnms* among us, and what was their Employment: I told him we had great Numbers, that in Summer they grazed in the Fields, and in the Winter were kept in Houſes, with Hay and Oats, when *Yahoo* Servants were employed to rub their Skins ſmooth, comb their Manes, pick their Feet, ſerve them Food and make their Beds. I underſtand you well, ſaid my Maſter, it is now very plain from all you have ſpoken, that whatever Share of Reaſon the *Yahoos* pretended to, the *Houyhnhnms* are your Maſters; I heartily wiſh our *Yahoos*

would be so tractable. I begged his Honour would be pleased to excuse me from proceeding any farther, because I was very certain that the Account he expected from me would be highly displeasing. But he insisted in commanding me to let him know the best and the worst: I told him, he should be obeyed. I owned, that the *Houyhnhnms* among us, whom we called *Horses*, were the most generous and comely Animal we had; that they excelled in Strength and Swiftness; and when they belonged to Persons of Quality, employed in travelling, racing or drawing Chariots, they were treated with much Kindness and Care, 'till they fell into Diseases, or became foundered in the Feet; and then they were sold, and used to all kind of Drudgery 'till they dyed; after which their Skins were stripped and sold for what they were worth, and their Bodies left to be devoured by Dogs and Birds of Prey. But the common Race of Horses had not so good Fortune, being kept by Farmes and Carriers, and other mean People who put them to greater Labour and fed them worse. I described, as well as I could our Way of Rideing, the Shape, and Use of a Bridle, a Saddle, a Spur, and a Whip, of Harness and Wheels. I added, that we fastned Plates of a certain hard Substance, called *Iron*, at the Bottom of their Feet, to preserve their Hoofs from being broken by the stony Ways on which we often travelled.

My Master, after some Expressions of great Indignation wondered how we dared to venture upon a *Houyhnhnm*'s Back, for he was sure that the meanest Servant in his House would be able to shake off the strongest *Yahoo*, or by lying down and rolling on his Back, squeeze the Brute to Death. I answered, That our Horses were trained up from three or four Years old, to the several Uses we intended them for; That if any of them proved intolerably vicious, they were employed for Carriages; that they were severely beaten while they were young, for any mischievous Tricks: That the Males, designed for common Use of Riding or Draught, were generally *castrated* about two Years after their Birth, to take down their Spirits, and make them more tame and gentle; that indeed they were sensible of Rewards and Punishments; but his Honour would please to consider, that they had not the least Tincture of Reason any more than the *Yahoos* in this Country.

It

It put me to the Pains of many Circumlocutions to give my Maſter a right Idea, of what I ſpoke; for their Language doth not abound in Variety of Words, becauſe their Wants and Paſſions are fewer than among us. But it is impoſſible to repeat his noble Reſentment at our ſavage Treatment of the *Houyhnhnms* Race, particularly after I had explained the Manner and Uſe of *caſtrating* Horſes among us, to hinder them from propagating their Kind, and to render them more ſervile. He ſaid, if it were poſſible there could be any Country where *Yahoos* alone were endued with Reaſon, they certainly muſt be the governing Animal, becauſe Reaſon will in time always prevail againſt brutal Strength. But, conſidering the Frame of our Bodies, and eſpecially of mine, he thought no Creature of equal Bulk was ſo ill contrived, for employing that Reaſon in the common Office of Life; whereupon he deſired to know, whether thoſe among whom I lived, reſembled me or the *Yahoos* of his Country. I aſſured him that I was as well ſhaped as moſt of my Age; but the Younger and the Females were much more ſoft and tender, and the Skins of the latter generally as white as Milk. He ſaid, I differed indeed from other *Yahoos*, being much more cleanly, and not altogether ſo deformed, but in point of real Advantage, he thought I differed for the worſe. That my Nails were of no Uſe to my Fore or Hinder-feet: As to my Fore-feet, he could not properly call them by that Name, for he never obſerved me to walk upon them; that they were too ſoft to bear the Ground; that I generally went with them uncovered, neither was the Covering I ſometimes wore on them, of the ſame Shape, or ſo ſtrong as that on my Feet behind. That I could not walk with any Security, for if either of my Hinder-feet ſlipped, I muſt inevitably fall. He then began to find Fault with other Parts of my Body, the Flatneſs of my Face, the Prominence of my Noſe, mine Eyes placed directly in the Front, ſo that I could not look on either Side without turning my Head: That I was not able to feed myſelf, without liſting my Fore-feet to my Mouth: And therefore Nature had placed thoſe Joynts to anſwer that Neceſſity. He knew not what could be the Uſe of thoſe ſeveral Cleſts and Diviſions in my Feet behind, that theſe were too ſoft to bear the Hardneſs and Sharpneſs of Stones without a Covering made from the Skin of ſome other Brute; that my whole

Body

Body wanted a Fence againſt Heat and Cold, which I was forced to put on and off every Day with Tedioufneſs and Trouble. And laſtly, that he obſerved every Animal in this Country naturally to abhor the *Yahoos*, whom the Weaker avoided, and the Stronger drove from them. So that ſuppoſing us to have the Gift of Reaſon, he could not ſee how it were poſſible to cure that natural Antipathy which every Creature diſcovered againſt us; nor conſequently, how we could tame, and render them ſerviceable. However, he would (as he ſaid) debate the Matter no farther, becauſe he was more deſirous to know my own Story, the Country where I was born, and the ſeveral Actions and Events of my Life before I came hither.

I aſſured him, how extremely deſirous I was, that he ſhould be ſatisfied in every Point; but I doubted much, whether it would be poſſible for me to explain myſelf on ſeveral Subjects whereof his Honour could have no Conception, becauſe I ſaw nothing in his Country to which I could reſemble them. That however I would do my beſt, and ſtrive to expreſs myſelf by Similitudes, humbly deſiring his Aſſiſtance when I wanted proper Words; which he was pleaſed to promiſe me.

I ſaid, my Birth was of honeſt Parents, in an Iſland call'd *England*, which was remote from this Country, as many Days Journey as the ſtrongeſt of his Honour's Servants could travel in the Annual Courſe of the Sun. That I was bred a Surgeon, whoſe Trade is to cure Wounds and Hurts in the Body, got by Accident or Violence; that my Country was governed by a Female Man, whom we called *Queen*. That I left it to get Riches, whereby I might maintain myſelf and Family when I ſhould return. That in my laſt Voyage I was Commander of the Ship, and had about fifty *Yahoos* under me, many of which died at Sea, and I was forced to ſupply them by others picked out from ſeveral Nations. That our Ship was twice in danger of being ſunk; the firſt Time by a great Storm, and the ſecond, by ſtriking againſt a Rock. Here my Maſter interpoſed, by aſking me, how I could perſuade Strangers out of different Countries to venture with me, after the Loſſes I had ſuſtained, and the Hazards I had run. I ſaid, they were Fellows of deſperate Fortunes, forced to fly from the Places

of

of their Birth, on account of their Poverty or their Crimes. Some were undone by Law-ſuits, others ſpent all they had in Drinking, Whoring and Gaming; others fled for Treaſon; many for Murder, Theft, Poiſoning, Robbery, Perjury, Forgery, Coining falſe Money, for committing Rapes, or Sodomy, for flying from their Colours, or deſerting to the Enemy, and moſt of them had broken Priſon; none of theſe durſt return to their Native Countries for fear of being hanged, or of ſtarving in a Jail; and therefore were under a Neceſſity of ſeeking a Livelihood in other Places.

During this Diſcourſe, my Maſter was pleaſed to interrupt me ſeveral times; I had made uſe of many Circumlocutions in deſcribing to him the Nature of the ſeveral Crimes to which moſt of our Crew had been forced to fly their Country. This Labour took up ſeveral Days Converſation before he was able to comprehend me. He was wholly at a Loſs to know what could be the Uſe or Neceſſity of practiſing thoſe Vices. To clear up which, I endeavoured to give him ſome Ideas of the Deſire of Power and Riches, and of the terrible Effects of Luſt, Intemperance, Malice and Envy. All this I was forced to define and deſcribe by putting of Caſes, and making of Suppoſitions. After which, like one whoſe Imagination was ſtruck with ſomething never ſeen or heard of before, he would lift up his Eyes with Amazement and Indignation. Power, Government, War, Law, Puniſhment, and a thouſand other Things had no Terms, wherein that Language could expreſs them, which made the Difficulty almoſt inſuperable to give my Maſter any Conception of what I meant. But being of an excellent Underſtanding, much improved by Contemplation and Converſe, he at laſt arrived at a competent Knowledge of what human Nature in our parts of the World is capable to perform, and deſired I would give him ſome particular Account of that Land, which we call *Europe*, but eſpecily of my own Country.

CHAP. V.

The Author at his Master's Command informs him of the State of England. *The Causes of War among the Princes of* Europe. *The Author begins to explain the* English *Constitution.*

THE Reader may please to observe, that the following Extract of many Conversations I had with my Master, contains a Summary of the most material Points, of which we discoursed at several times for above two Years; his Honour often desiring fuller Satisfaction as I farther improved in the *Houyhnhnm* Tongue. I laid before him, as well as I could, the whole State of *Europe*; I discoursed of Trade and Manufactures, of Arts and Sciences; and the Answers I gave to all the Questions he made as they arose upon several Subjects, were a Fund of Conversation not to be exhausted. But I shall here only set down the Substance of what passed between us concerning my own Country, reducing it into Order as well as I can, without any Regard to Time or other Circumstances, while I strictly adhere to Truth. My only Concern is, that I shall hardly be able to do Justice to my Master's Arguments and Expressions, which must needs suffer by my Want of Capacity as well as by a Translation into our barbarous *English*.

In Obedience therefore to his Honour's Commands, I related to him the *Revolution* under the Prince of *Orange*, the long War with *France* entered into by the said Prince, and renewed by his Successor the present Queen, wherein the greatest Powers of *Christendom* were engaged, and which still continued: I computed at his Request, that about a Million of *Yahoos* might have been killed in the whole Progress of it, and perhaps a hundred or more Cities taken, and thrice as many Ships burnt or sunk.

He asked me what were the usual Causes or Motives that made one Country go to War with another. I answered they were innumerable, but I should only mention a few of the chief. Sometimes the Ambition of Princes, who never think they have Land or People enough

nough to govern. Sometimes the Corruption of Miniſters, who engage their Maſter in a War, in order to ſtifle or divert the Clamour of the Subjects againſt their evil Adminiſtration. Difference in Opinions hath coſt many Millions of Lives: For Inſtance, whether *Fleſh* be *Bread*, or *Bread* be *Fleſh*; whether the Juice of a certain *Berry* be *Blood* or *Wine*; whether *Whiſtling* be a Vice or a Virtue; whether it be better to *kiſs a poſt*, or throw it into the Fire; what is the beſt Colour for a *Coat*, whether *black*, *white*, *red*, or *gray*; and whether it ſhould be *long* or *ſhort*, *narrow* or *wide*, *dirty* or *clean*, with many more. Neither are any Wars ſo furious and bloody, or of ſo long a Continuance as thoſe occaſioned by Difference in Opinion, eſpecially if it be in things indifferent.

Sometimes the Quarrel between two Princes is to decide which of them ſhall diſpoſſeſs a third of his Dominions, where neither of them pretend to any Right. Sometimes one Prince quarrelleth with another, for fear the other ſhould quarrel with him. Sometimes a War is entered upon, becauſe the Enemy is too *ſtrong*, and ſometimes becauſe he is too *weak*. Sometimes our Neighbours *want* the *things* which we *have*, or *have* the things which we *want*; and we both fight, 'till they take ours or give us theirs. It is a very juſtifiable Cauſe of War to invade a Country after the People have been waſted by Famine, deſtroyed by Peſtilence or embroiled by Factions among themſelves. It is juſtifiable to enter into War againſt our neareſt Ally, when one of his Towns lies convenient for us, or a Territory of Land, that would render our Dominions round and compleat. If a Prince ſends Forces into a Nation, where the People are poor and ignorant, he may lawfully put half of them to death, and make Slaves of the reſt, in order to civilize and reduce them from their barbarous Way of Living. It is a very kingly, honourable, and frequent Practiſe, when one Prince deſires the Aſſiſtance of another to ſecure him againſt an Invaſion, that the Aſſiſtant when he hath driven out the Invader, ſhould ſeize on the Dominions himſelf, and kill, impriſon, or baniſh the Prince he came to relieve. Alliance by Blood or Marriage, is a frequent Cauſe of War between Princes, and the nearer the Kindred is, the greater is their Diſpoſition to quarrel: *Poor* Nations are *hungry*, and *rich* Nations are *proud*, and Pride and Hunger will ever be

at Variance. For those Reasons, the Trade of a *Soldier* is held the most honourable of all other: Because a *Soldier* is a *Yahoo* hired to kill in cold Blood, as many of his own Species, who hath never offended him, as possible he can.

There are likewise another kind of Princes in *Europe*, not able to make War by themselves, who hire out their Troops to richer Nations for so much a Day to each Man; of which they keep three fourths to themselves, and it is the best Part of their Maintenance; such are those in many *northern* Parts of *Europe*.

What you have told me, (said my Master) upon the Subject of War, does indeed discover most admirably the Effects of that Reason you pretend to: However, it is happy that the *Shame* is greater than the *Danger*; and that Nature hath left you utterly uncapable of doing much Mischief.

For your Mouths lying flat with your Faces, you can hardly bite each other to any Purpose, unless by Consent. Then as to the Claws upon your Feet before and behind, they are so short and tender that one of our *Yahoos* would drive a Dozen of yours before him. And therefore in recounting the Numbers of those who have been killed in Battle, I cannot but think that you have *said the Thing that is not*.

I could not forbear shaking my Head, and smiling a little at his Ignorance. And being no Stranger to the Art of War, I gave him a Description of Cannons, Culverins, Muskets, Carabines, Pistols, Bullets, Powder, Swords, Bayonets, Sieges, Retreats, Attacks, Undermines, Countermines, Bombardments, Sea-fights; Ships sunk with a thousand Men, twenty thousand killed on each Side; dying Groans, Limbs flying in the Air, Smoak, Noise, Confusion, trampling to death under Horses Feet; Pursuit, Victory; Fields strewed with Carcasses left for Food to Dogs, and Wolves, and Birds of Prey; plundering, striping, ravishing, burning, and destroying. And to set forth the Valour of my own dear Countrymen, I assured him, that I had seen them blow up a hundred Enemies at once in a Siege, and as many in a Ship: and beheld the dead Bodies come down in Pieces from the Clouds, to the great Diversion of the Spectators.

I was going on to more Particulars, when

when my Maſter commanded me Silence. He ſaid, whoever underſtood the Nature of *Yahoos* might eaſily believe it poſſible for ſo vile an Animal, to be capable of every Action I had named, if their Strength and Cunning equalled their Malice. But as my Diſcourſe had increaſed his Abhorrence of the whole Species, ſo I found it gave him a Diſturbance in his Mind, to which he was wholly a Stranger before. He thought his Ears, being uſed to ſuch abominable Words, might by Degrees admit them with leſs deteſtation. That although he hated the *Yahoos* of this Country, yet he no more blamed them for their odious Qualities, than he did a *Gnnayh* (a bird of Prey) for its Cruelty, or a ſharp Stone for cutting his Hoof. But when a Creature, pretending to Reaſon, could be capable of ſuch Enormities, he dreaded leſt the Corruption of that Faculty might be worſe than Brutality itſelf. He ſeemed therefore confident, that inſtead of Reaſon we were only poſſeſſed of ſome Quality fitted to increaſe our natural Vices; as the Reflection from a troubled Stream returns the Image of an ill ſhaped Body, not only *larger*, but more *diſtorted*.

He added, That he had heard too much upon the Subject of War, both in this, and ſome former Diſcourſes. There was another Point which a little perplexed him at preſent. I had informed him, that ſome of our Crew left their Country on account of being ruined by *Law*; that I had already explained the Meaning of the Word; but he was at a Loſs how it ſhould come to paſs, that the *Law*, which was intended for every Man's Preſervation, ſhould be any Man's Ruin. Therefore he deſired to be farther ſatisfied what I meant by *Law*, and what ſort of Diſpenſers thereof it could be, by whoſe practices the property of any Perſon could be loſt, inſtead of being preſerved. He added, he ſaw not what great Occaſion there could be for this thing called *Law*, ſince all the Intentions and Purpoſes of it may be fully anſwered by following the Dictates of *Nature* and *Reaſon*, which are ſufficient Guides for a reaſonable Animal, as we pretended to be, in ſhewing us what we ought to do, and what to avoid.

I aſſured his Honour, that *Law* was a Science wherein I had not much converſed, having little more Knowledge of it than what I had obtained by employing Advocates, in vain, upon ſome In-

juſtices that had been done me, and by converſing with ſome others, who by the ſame Method had firſt loſt their Subſtance, and then left their own Country under the Mortification of ſuch Diſappointments; however, I would give him all the Satisfaction I was able.

I ſaid, That thoſe who made profeſſion of this Science were exceedingly multiplied, being almoſt equal to the Caterpillars in Number; that they were of divers Degrees, Diſtinctions aud Denominations. The numerouſneſs of thoſe that dedicated themſelves to this Profeſſion were ſuch, that the fair and juſtifiable Advantage and Income of the Profeſſion was not ſufficient for the decent and handſome Maintenance of multitudes of thoſe who followed it. Hence it came to paſs that it was found needful to ſupply that by Artifice and Cunning, which could not be procured by juſt and honeſt Methods: The better to bring which about, very many Men among us were bred up from their Youth in the Art of proving Words multiplyed for that Purpoſe, that *white* is *black*, and *black* is *white*, according as they are paid. The Greatneſs of theſe Mens Aſſurance, and the Boldneſs of their Pretenſions, gained upon the Opinion of the Vulgar, whom in a Manner they made Slaves of, and got into their Hands much the larger Share of the practice of their Profeſſion. Theſe Practitioners were by Men of Diſcernment called *Pettifoggers*, (that is, *Confounders*, or rather, *Deſtroyers of Right.*) As it was my ill Hap, as well as the Misfortune of my ſuffering Acquaintance, to be enraged only with this Species of the Profeſſion, I deſired is Honour to underſtand the Deſcription I had to give, and the Ruin I had complained of, to relate to theſe Sectaries only; and how and by what Means the Misfortunes we met with were brought upon us by the Management of theſe Men, might be more eaſily conceived by explaining to him their Method of proceding, which could not be better done than by giving him an Example.

My Neighbour, ſaid I, I will ſuppoſe, has a mind to my *Cow*, he hires one of theſe Advocates to prove that he ought to have my *Cow* from me. I muſt then hire another of them to defend my Right, it being againſt all Rules of *Law* that any Man ſhould be allowed to ſpeak for himſelf. Now in this Caſe, I who am the right Owner lie under two great Diſ-

advantages.

advantages. First, my Advocate, being, as I ſaid before, practiſing almoſt from his Cradle in defending Falſhood, is quite out of his Element when he would argue for Right, which, as an Office unnatural, he attempts with great awkardneſs if not with an Ill-will. The ſecond Diſadvantage is that my Advocate muſt proceed with great Caution; for, ſince the Maintenance of ſo many depend on the keeping up of Buſineſs, ſhould he proceed too ſummarily, if he does not incur the Diſpleaſure of his Superiors, he is ſure to gain the Ill-will and Hatred of his Brethren, as being by them eſteemed one that would leſſen the Practice of the Law. This being the Caſe, I have but two Methods to preſerve my *Cow*. The firſt is, to gain over my Adverſary's Advocate with a double Fee; from the Manner and Deſign of whoſe Education before-mentioned, it is eaſy to expect he will be induced to drop his Client, and let the Ballance fall to my Side. The ſecond Way is for my Advocate not to inſiſt on the Juſtice of my Cauſe, by allowing the *Cow* to belong to my Adverſary; and this if it be dextrouſly and ſkillfully done, will go a great Way towards obtaining a favourable Verdict, it having been found, from a careful Obſervation of Iſſues and Events, that the wrong Side, under the Management of ſuch Practitioners, has the fairer Chance for ſucceſs; and this more eſpecially if it happens as it did in mine and my Friend's Caſe, and may have done ſince; that the Perſon appointed to decide all Controverſies of Propriety, as well as for the Tryal of Criminals, who ſhould be taken out of the moſt knowing and wiſe of his Profeſſion, is by the Recommendation of a great Favourite, or Court-Miſtreſs, choſen out of the Sect beforementioned, and ſo having been under a ſtrange Biaſs all his Life againſt Equity and fair dealing, lies as it were under a fatal Neceſſity of favouring, ſhifting, double-dealing and Oppreſſion; and beſides, through Age, Infirmity, and Diſtempers grown lazy, unactive, and inattentive, and thereby almoſt incapacitated from doing any thing becoming the Nature of his Imployment, and the Duty of his Office. In ſuch Caſes, the Deciſions and Determinations of Men ſo bred, and ſo qualified, may with Reaſon be expected on the wrong Side of the Cauſe, ſince thoſe who can take Harangue and Noiſe, (if purſued with Warmth, and drawn out into a Length) for reaſoning, are not much to be wondered at, if they infer

the

the Weight of the Argument from the Heavineſs of the Pleading.

It is a Maxim among theſe Men, That whatever has been done before may legally be done again: And therefore they take ſpecial Care to record all the Deciſions formerly made, even thoſe which have through Ignorance or Corruption contradicted the Rules of Common Juſtice, and the general Reaſon of Mankind. Theſe, under the Name of *Precedents*, they produce as Authorities, and thereby endeavour to juſtify the moſt iniquitous Opinions; and they are ſo lucky in this Practice, that it rarely fails of Decrees anſwerable to their Intent and Expectation.

In pleading, they ſtudiouſly avoid entring into the *Merits* of the Cauſe; but are loud, violent, and tedious in dwelling upon all Circumſtances which are not to the Purpoſe. For Inſtance, in the Caſe already mentioned; they never deſire to know what Claim or Title my Adverſary had to my *Cow*; but whether the ſaid *Cow* were red or black, her Horns long or ſhort; whether the Field I graze her in be round or ſquare; whether ſhe was milked at home or abroad; what Diſeaſes ſhe was ſubject to, and the like, after which they conſult *Precedents*, adjourn the Cauſe from time to time, and in ten, twenty, or thirty Years, come to an Iſſue.

It is likewiſe to be obſerved, that this Society hath a peculiar Cant and Jargon of their own, that no other Mortal can underſtand, and wherein all their Laws are written, which they take ſpecial Care to multiply; whereby they have gone near to confound the very Eſſence of Truth and Falſhood, of Right and Wrong; ſo that it may take thirty Years to decide whether the Field, left me by my Anceſtors for ſix Generations, belongs to me or to a Stranger three hundred Miles off.

In the Tryal of Perſons accuſed for Crimes againſt the State, the Method is much more ſhort and commendable: For if thoſe in Power, who know well how to chuſe Inſtruments fit for their Purpoſe, take care to recommend and promote out of this Clan a proper Perſon, his Method of Education and Practice makes it eaſy to him, when his Patron's Diſpoſition is underſtood, without Difficulty or Study either to condemn or acquit the Criminal,

minal, and at the ſame time ſtrictly preſerve all due Forms of Law.

Here my Maſter interpoſing ſaid it was a pity, that Creatures endowed with ſuch prodigious Abilities of Mind as theſe Advocates, by the Deſcription I gave of them, muſt certainly be, were not rather encouraged to be Inſtructors of others in Wiſdom and Knowledge. In Anſwer to which I aſſured his Honour, that the Buſineſs and Study of their own Calling and Profeſſion ſo took up all their Thoughts, and engroſſed all their Time, that they minded nothing elſe; and that therefore, in all Points out of their own Trade many of them were of ſo great Ignorance and Stupidity, that it was hard to pick out of any Profeſſion a generation of Men more deſpicable in common Converſation, or who were ſo much looked upon as avowed Enemies to all Knowledge and Learning, equally diſpoſed to pervert the general Reaſon of Mankind in every other Subject of Diſcourſe, as in that of their own Calling.

CHAP. VI.

A Continuation of the State of England; *ſo well governed by a Queen as to need no firſt Miniſter. The Character of ſuch an one in ſome* European *Courts.*

MY Maſter was yet wholly at a Loſs to underſtand what Motive could incite this Race of Lawyers to perplex, diſquiet, and weary themſelves, and engage in a Confederacy of Injuſtice, meerly for the ſake of injuring their Fellow-Animals; neither could he comprehend what I meant in ſaying they did it for *Hire*. Whereupon I was at much Pains to deſcribe to him the Uſe of *Money*, the Materials it was made of, and the Value of the Metals; that when a *Yahoo* had got a great Store of this precious Subſtance, he was able to purchaſe whatever he had a mind to, the fineſt Cloathing, the nobleſt Houſes, great Tracts of Land, the moſt coſtly Meats and Drinks, and have his Choice of the moſt beautiful Females. Therefore, ſince *Money* alone was able to perform all theſe Feats, our *Yahoos* thought they could never

never have enough of it to ſpend or to ſave, as they found themſelves inclined from their natural Bent, either to Profuſion or Avarice. That the rich Man enjoyed the Fruit of the poor Man's Labour, and the Latter were a thouſand to one in Proportion to the former. That the Bulk of our People were forced to live miſerably, by labouring every Day for ſmall Wages, to make a few live plentifully. I enlarged myſelf much on theſe and many other Particulars to the ſame purpoſe; but his Honour was ſtill to ſeek: For he went upon a Suppoſition, that all Animals had a title to their ſhare in the Productions of the Earth, and eſpecially thoſe who preſided over the reſt. Therefore he deſired I would let him know, what theſe coſtly Meats were, and how many of us happened to want them. Whereupon I enumerated as many ſorts as came into my Head, with the various Methods of dreſſing them, which could not be done without ſending Veſſels by Sea to every Part of the World, as well for Liquors to drink as for Sauces, and innumerable other Conveniencies. I aſſured him, that this whole Globe of Earth muſt be at leaſt three times gone round, before one of our better Female *Yahoos* could get her Breakfaſt, or a Cup to put it in. He ſaid, That muſt needs be a miſerable Country which cannot furniſh Food for its own Inhabitants. But what he chiefly wondered at, was, how ſuch vaſt Tracts of Grounds, as I deſcribed, ſhould be wholly without *freſh Water*, and the People put to the Neceſſity of ſending over the Sea for Drink. I replied, that *England* (the dear Place of my Nativity) was computed to produce three times the Quantity of Food, more than its Inhabitants are able to conſume, as well as Liquors extracted from Grain, or preſſed out of the Fruit of certain Trees, which made excellent Drink, and the ſame Proportion in every other Convenience of Life. But in order to feed the Luxury and Intemperance of the Males, and the Vanity of the Females, we ſent away the greateſt Part of our neceſſary Things to other Countries, from whence in return we brought the Materials of Diſeaſes, Folly and Vice, to ſpend among ourſelves. Hence it follows of Neceſſity, that vaſt Numbers of our People are compelled to ſeek their Livelihood by Begging, Robbing, Stealing, Cheating, Pimping, Forſwearing, Flattering, Suborning, Forging, Gaming, Lying, Fawning, Hectoring, Voting, Scribling, Stargazing, Poiſoning, Whoring, Canting, Libelling, Free-

think-

thinking, and the like Occupations: Every one of which Terms, I was at much Pains to make him unerſtand.

That *Wine* was not imported among us from foreign Countries, to ſupply the want of Water or other Drinks, but, becauſe it was a ſort of Liquid which made us merry, by putting us out of our Senſes; diverted all melancholy Thoughts, begat wild extravagant Imaginations in the Brain, raiſed our Hopes, and baniſh'd our Fears, ſuſpended every Office of Reaſon for a time, and deprived us of the Uſe of our Limbs, 'till we fell into a profound Sleep; although it muſt be confeſſed, that we always awaked ſick and diſpirited, and that the uſe of this Liquor filled us with Diſeaſes, which made our Lives uncomfortable and ſhort.

But beſides all this, the Bulk of our People ſupported themſelves by furniſhing the Neceſſities and Conveniencies of Life to the Rich, and to each other. For Inſtance, when I am at Home and dreſſed as I ought to be, I carry on my Body the Workmanſhip of an hundred Tradeſmen; the Building and Furniture of my Houſe employ as many more, and five Times the Number to adorn my Wife.

I was going on to tell him of another ſort of People, who get their Livelihood, by attending the Sick, having upon ſome Occaſions informed his Honour that many of my Crew had died of Diſeaſes. But here it was with the utmoſt Difficulty, that I brought him to apprehend what I meant. He could eaſily conceive, that a *Houyhnhnm* grew weak and heavy a few Days before his Death, or by ſome Accident might hurt a Limb: But that Nature, who works all Things to Perfection, ſhould ſuffer any Pains to breed in our Bodies, he thought it impoſſible, and deſired to know the Reaſon of ſo unaccountable an Evil. I told him we fed on a thouſand Things which operated the one contrary to each other; that we eat when we were not a hungry, and drank without the Provocation of Thirſt; That we ſat whole Nights Drinking ſtrong Liquors without eating a Bit, which diſpoſed us to Sloth, enflamed our Bodies, and precipated or prevented Digeſtion. That proſtitute Female *Yahoos* acquired a certain Malady, which bred Rottenneſs in the Bones of thoſe who fell into their Embraces: That

this

this and many other Diſeaſes were propagated from Father to Son, ſo that great Numbers come into the World with complicated Maladies upon them; that it would be endleſs to give him a Catalogue of all Diſeaſes incident to human Bodies; for they could not be fewer than five or ſix hundred, ſpread over every Limb, and Joint; in ſhort, every Part external and inteſtine, having Diſeaſes apropriated to them. To remedy which, there was a ſort of People bred up among us, in the Profeſſion or Pretence of curing the Sick. And becauſe I had ſome Skill in the Faculty, I would in Gratitude to his Honour, let him know the whole Myſtery and Method by which they proceed.

Their Fundamental is, That all Diſeaſes ariſe from *Repletion*, from whence they conclude, that a great *Evacuation* of the Body, is neceſſary, either through the natural Paſſage, or upwards at the Mouth. Their next Buſineſs is, from Herbs, Minerals, Gums, Oils, Shells, Salts, Juices, Sea-Weed, Excrements, Barks of Trees, Serpents, Toads, Frogs, Spiders, dead Men's Fleſh and Bones, Beaſts and Fiſhes, to form a Compoſition for Smell and Taſte the moſt abominable, nauſeous and deteſtable, they can poſſibly contrive, which the Stomach immediately rejects with Loathing, and this they call a *Vomit*; or elſe from the ſame Store-houſe, with ſome other poiſonous Additions, they command us to take in at the Orifice *above* or *below*, (juſt as the Phyſician then happens to be diſpoſed) a Medicine equally annoying and diſguſtful to the Bowels, which relaxing the Belly, drives down all before it, and this they call a Purge, or a Clyſter. For Nature (as the Phyſicians alledge) having intended the ſuperior anterior Orifice only for the *Intromiſſion* of Solids and Liquids, and the Inferior for Ejection, theſe Artiſts ingeniouſly conſidering, that in all Diſeaſes Nature is forced out of her Seat; therefore to replace her in it, the Body muſt be treated in a Manner directly contrary, by interchanging the Uſe of each Orifice, forcing Solids and Liquids in at the *Anus*, and making Evacuations at the Mouth.

But beſides real Diſeaſes, we are ſubject to many that are only imaginary, for which the Phyſicians have invented imaginary Cures; theſe have their ſeveral Names, and ſo have the Drugs that are proper for them, and with theſe our Female *Yahoos* are always infeſted.

One

One great Excellency in this Tribe is, their Skill in *Prognoſticks*, wherein they ſeldom fail; their Predictions in real Diſeaſes, when they riſe to any Degree of Malignity, generally portending *Death*, which is always in their Power when Recovery is not: And therefore, upon any unexpected Signs of Amendment, after they have pronounced their Sentence, rather than be accuſed as falſe Prophets they know how to approve their Sagacity to the World by a ſeaſonable Doſe.

They are likewiſe of eſpecial Uſe to Huſbands and Wives, who are grown weary of their Mates, to eldeſt Sons, to great Miniſters of State, and often to Princes.

I had formerly, upon Occaſion, diſcourſed with my Maſter upon the Nature of *Government* in general, and particularly of our own *excellent Conſtitution*, deſervedly the Wonder and Envy of the whole World. But having here accidentally mentioned a *Miniſter of State*, he commanded me ſome Time after to inform him, what Species of *Yahoos* I particularly meant by that Application.

I told him, that our She Governor or Queen having no Ambition to gratify, no Inclination to ſatisfy of extending her Power to the Injury of her Neighbours, or the Prejudice of our own Subjects, was therefore ſo far from needing a corrupt Miniſtry to carry on or cover any ſiniſter Deſigns, that ſhe not only directs her own Actions to the good of her People, conducts them by the Direction, and reſtrains them within the Limitation of the Laws of our own Country; but ſubmits the Behaviour and Acts of thoſe ſhe intruſts with the Adminiſtration of her Affairs, to the Examination of her great Council, and ſubjects them to the Penalties of the Law, and therefore never puts any ſuch Confidence in any of her Subjects, as to entruſt them with the whole and entire Adminiſtration of her Affairs: But I added, that in ſome former Reigns here, and in many other Courts of *Europe* now, where Princes grew indolent and careleſs of their own Affairs, through a conſtant Love and Purſuit of Pleaſure, they made uſe of ſuch Adminiſtrator, as I had mentioned, under the Title of *firſt* or *chief Miniſter of State*, the Deſcription of which, as far as it may be collected not only from their Actions, but from the Letters, Me-

moirs, and Writings publiſhed by themſelves, the Truth of which has not yet been diſputed, may be allowed to be as follows: That he is a Perſon wholly exempt from Joy and Grief, Love and Hatred, Pity and Anger; at leaſt makes uſe of no other Paſſions but a violent Deſire of Wealth, Power and Titles; That he never tells Words to all Uſes, except to the Indication of his Mind; That he never tells a *Truth*, but with an Intent that you ſhould take it for a *Lye*; nor a *Lye*, but with a Deſign that you ſhould take it for a *Truth*, that thoſe he ſpeaks worſt of behind their Backs, are in the ſureſt Way to Preferment; and whenever he begins to praiſe you to others, or to yourſelf, you are from that Day forlorn. The worſt Mark you can receive is a *Promiſe*, eſpecially when it is confirmed with an Oath; after which every wiſe Man retires, and gives over all Hopes.

There are three Methods by which a Man may riſe to be chief Miniſter: The firſt is, by knowing how with Prudence to diſpoſe of a Wife, a Daughter, or a Siſter: The Second, by betraying or undermining his Predeceſſor: And the third is by a *furious Zeal* in publick Aſſemblies againſt the Corruptions of the Court. But a wiſe Prince would rather chuſe to employ thoſe who practiſe the laſt of theſe Methods; becauſe ſuch Zealots prove always the moſt obſequious and ſubſervient to the Will and Paſſions of their Maſter. That theſe *Miniſters* having all Employments at their Diſpoſal, preſerve themſelvs in Power, by bribing the Majority of a Senate or great Council; and at laſt, by an *Act of Indemnity* (whereof I deſcribed the Nature to him) they ſecured themſelves from After-reckonings, and retired from the Publick, laden with the Spoils of the Nation.

The Palace of a *Chief Miniſter*, is a Seminary to breed up others in his own Trade: The Pages, Lackqueys, and Porter, by imitating their Maſter, become *Miniſters of State* in their ſeveral Diſtricts, and learn to excel in the three principal *Ingredients*, of *Inſolence*, *Lying*, and *Bribery*. Accordingly they have a *Subaltern* Court paid to them by Perſons of the beſt Rank, and ſometimes by the Force of Dexterity and Impudence, arrive through ſeveral Gradations, to be Succeſſors to their Lord.

He is uſually governed by a decayed Wench,

Wench, or favourite Footman, who are the Tunnels through which all Graces are conveyed, and may porperly be called, *in the laſt Reſort*, the Governors of the Kingdom.

One Day in Diſcourſe, my Maſter having heard me mention the *Nobility* of my Country, was pleaſed to make me a Compliment which I could not pretend to deſerve: That he was ſure, I muſt have been born of ſome noble Family, becauſe I far exceeded in Shape, Colour, and Cleanlineſs, all the *Yahoos* of this Nation although I ſeemed to fail in Strength and Agility, which muſt be imputed to my different Way of Living from thoſe other Brutes; and beſides, I was not only endowed with the Faculty of Speech, but likewiſe with ſome Rudiments of Reaſon, to a Degree, that with all his Acquaintance I paſſed for a Prodigy.

He made me obſerve, that among the *Houyhnhnms*, the *White*, the *Sorrel*, and the *Iron-grey*, were not ſo exactly ſhaped as the *Bay*, the *Dapple-grey*, and the *Black*; nor born with equal Talents of the Mind, or a Capacity to improve them; and therefore continued always in the Condition of Servants, without ever aſpiring to match out of their own Race which in that Country would be reckoned monſtrous and unnatural.

I made his Honour my moſt humble Acknowledgments for the good Opinion he was pleaſed to conceive of me; but aſſured him at the ſame Time, that my Birth was of the lower Sort, having ben born of plain honeſt Parents, who were juſt able to give me a tolerable Education: That *Nobility* among us was altogether a different Thing from the Idea he had of it; That our young *Noblemen* are bred from their Childhood in Idleneſs and Luxury; that as ſoon as Years will permit, they conſume their Vigour, and contract odious Diſeaſes among lewd Females; that when their Fortunes are almoſt ruined, they marry ſome Woman of mean Birth, diſagreeable Perſon, and unſound Conſtitution, meerly for the Sake of Money, whom they hate and deſpiſe. That the Productions of ſuch Marriages are generally ſcrophulous, ricketty, or deformed Children; by which Means the Family ſeldom continues above three Generations, unleſs the Wife takes Care to provide a healthy Father among her Neighbours or Acquaintance, in order to improve and continue the Breed. That

a weak,

a weak, diſeaſed Body, a meagre Countenance, and a ſallow Complexion, are no uncommon Marks of a *Great Man*; and a healthy robuſt Appearance is ſo far diſgraceful in a Man of Quality, that the World is apt to conclude his real Father to have been one of the Inferiors of the Family, eſpecially when it is ſeen that the Imperfections of his Mind run parallel with thoſe of his Body, and are little elſe than a Compoſition of Spleen, Dullneſs, Ignorance, Caprice, Senſuality and Pride.

CHAP. VII.

The Author's great Love of his Native Country. His Maſter's Obſervations upon the Conſtitution and Adminiſtration of England, *as deſcribed by the Author, with parallel Caſes and Compariſons. His Maſter's obſervations upon Human Nature.*

THE Reader may be diſpoſed to wonder how I could prevail on myſelf to give ſo free a Repreſentation of my own Species, among a Race of Mortals who are already too apt too conceive the vileſt Opinion of human Kind from that entire Congruity betwixt me and their *Yahoos*. But I muſt freely confeſs that the many Virtues of thoſe excellent *Quadrupeds*, placed in oppoſite View to human Corruptions, had ſo far opened my Eyes, and enlightened my Underſtanding, that I began to view the Actions and Paſſions of Man in a very different Light, and to think the Honour of my own Kind not worth managing; which, beſides, it was impoſſible for me to do before a Perſon of ſo acute a Judgment as my Maſter, who daily convinced me of a thouſand Faults in myſelf, whereof I had not the leaſt Perception before, and which among us would never be numbered even among human Infirmities: I had likwiſe learned from his Example an utter Deteſtation of all Falſhood or Diſguiſe; and *Truth* appeared ſo amiable to me, that I determined upon ſacrificing every Thing to do it.

Let

Let me deal ſo candidly with the Reader, as to confeſs, that there was yet a much ſtronger Motive for the Freedom I took in my Repreſentation of Things. I had not been a Year in this Country, before I contracted ſuch a Love and Veneration for the Inhabitants, that I entered on a firm Reſolution never to return to human Kind, but to paſs the reſt of my Life among theſe admirable *Houyhnhnms*, in the Contemplation and Practice of every Virtue; where I could have no Example or Incitement to Vice. But it was decreed by Fortune, my perpetual Enemy, that ſo great a Felicity ſhould not fall to my Share. However, it is now ſome Comfort to reflect, that in what I ſaid of my Countrymen, I *extenuated* their Faults as much as I durſt before ſo ſtrict an Examiner, and upon every Article gave as *favourable* a Turn as the Matter would bear. For, indeed, who is there alive that will not be ſwayed by his Biaſs and Partiality to the Place of his Birth?

I have related the Subſtance of ſeveral Converſations I had with my Maſter, during the greateſt Part of the Time I had the Honour to be in his Service, but have indeed, for Brevity ſake, omitted much more than is here ſet down.

When I had anſwered all his Queſtions, and his Curioſity ſeemed to be fully ſatisfied; he ſent for me one Morning early, and commanding me to ſit down at ſome Diſtance, (an Honour which he had never before conferred upon me;) he ſaid, he had been very ſeriouſly conſidering my whole Story, as far as it related both to myſelf and my Country: That he looked upon us as a ſort of Animals, to whoſe Share, by what Accident he could not conjecture, ſome ſmall Pittance of *Reaſon* had fallen, whereof we made no other Uſe than by its Aſſiſtance to aggravate our *natural* Corruptions, and to acquire new ones, which Nature had not given us: That we diſarmed ourſelves of the few Abilities ſhe had beſtowed, had been very ſucceſsful in multiplying our original Want, and ſeemed to ſpend our whole Lives in vain Endeavours to ſupply them by our own Inventions. That as to myſelf, it was manifeſt I had neither the Strength or Agility of a common *Yahoo*, that I walked infirmly on my hinder Feet, had found out a Contrivance to make my Claws of no Uſe or Defence, and to remove the Hair from my Chin, which was intended

as a Shelter from the Sun and the Weather. Laſtly, That I could neither run with Speed, nor climb Trees like my *Brethren* (as he called them) the *Yahoos* in this Country.

That our Inſtitutions of *Government* and *Law* were plainly owing to our groſs Defects in *Reaſon*, and, by Conſequence, in *Virtue*; becauſe *Reaſon* alone is ſufficient to govern a *rational* Creature; which was therefore a Character we had no Pretence to challenge, even from the Account I had given of my own People; although he manifeſtly perceived, that in order to favour them, I had concealed many particulars, and often *ſaid the Thing which was not*.

He was the more confirmed in this Opinion, becauſe he obſerved, that as I agreed in every Feature of my Body with other *Yahoos*, except where it was to my real Diſadvantage in Point of Strength, Speed, and Activity, the Shortneſs of my Claws, and ſome other Particulars, where Nature had no Part; ſo from the Repreſentation I had given him of our Lives, our Manners, and our Actions, he found as near a Reſemblance in the Diſpoſition of our Minds. He ſaid the *Yahoos* were known to hate one another more than they did any different Species of Animals; and the Reaſon uſually aſſigned, was, the Odiouſneſs of their own Shapes, which all could ſee in the reſt, but none in themſelves. He had therefore begun to think it not unwiſe in us to *cover* our Bodies, and by that Invention, conceal many of our own Deformities from each other, which would elſe be hardly ſupportable. But, he now found he had been miſtaken, and that the Diſſentions of thoſe Brutes in his Country were owing to the ſame Cauſe with ours, as I had deſcribed them. For, if (ſaid he) you throw among five *Yahoos* as much Food as would be ſufficient for fifty, they will, inſtead of eating peacably, fall together by the Ears, each ſingle one impatient to *have all to it ſelf*; and therefore a Servant was uſually employed to ſtand by while they were feeding abroad, and thoſe kept at home were tied at a Diſtance from each other; that if a Cow died of Age or Accident, before a *Houyhnhnm* could ſecure it for his own *Yahoos*, thoſe in the Neighbourhood would come in Herds to ſeize it, and then would enſue ſuch a Battle as I had deſcribed, with terrible Wounds made by their Claws on both Sides, although they ſeldom were able

able to kill one another for want of ſuch convenient Inſtruments of Death, as we had invented. At other Times the like Battles have been fought betwen the *Yahoos* of ſeveral Neighbourhoods, without any viſible Cauſe: Thoſe of one Diſtrict watching all Opportunities to ſurprize the next before they are prepared. But if they find their Project hath miſcarried, they return Home, and, for want of Enemies, engage in what I call a Civil War among themſelves.

That in ſome Fields of his Country there are certain *ſhining Stones* of ſeveral Colours, whereof the *Yahoos* are violently fond; and when Part of theſe *Stones* is fixed in the Earth, as it ſometimes happeneth, they will dig with their Claws for whole Days to get them out, then carry them away, and hide them by Heaps in their Kennels; but ſtill looking round with great Caution, for fear their Comrades ſhould find out their Treaſure. My Maſter ſaid, he could never diſcover the Reaſon of this unnatural Appetite, or how theſe Stones could be of any Uſe to a *Yahoo*; but now he believed it might proceed from the ſame Principle of *Avarice*, which I had aſcribed to Mankind; that he had once, by way of Experiment, privately removed a Heap of theſe *Stones* from the Place where one of his *Yahoos* had buried it: Whereupon, the ſordid Animal miſſing his Treaſure, by his loud lamenting brought the whole Herd to the Place, there miſerably howled, then fell to Biting, Tearing the Reſt, began to pine away, would neither eat, nor ſleep, nor work, 'till he ordered a Servant privately to convey the *Stones* into the ſame Hole, and hide them as before; which when his *Yahoo* had found, he preſently recovered his Spirits and good Humour, but took care to remove them to a better hiding Place, and hath ever ſince been a very ſerviceable Brute.

My Maſter farther aſſured me, which I alſo obſerved myſelf, That in the Fields where the *ſhining Stones* abound, the fierceſt and moſt frequent Battles are fought, occaſioned by perpetual Inroads of the Neighbouring *Yahoos*.

He ſaid, it was common when two *Yahoos* diſcovered ſuch a *Stone* in a Field, and were contending which of them ſhould be the Proprietor, a third would take the Advantage, and carry it away from them both; which my Maſter would needs

contend

contend to have ſome kind of Reſemblance with our *Suits at Law*; wherein I thought it for our Credit not to undeceive him; ſince the Deciſion he mentioned was much more equitable than many Decrees among us: Becauſe the Plaintiff and Defendant there loſt nothing beſides the *Stone* they contended for, whereas, our *Courts of Equity* would ſeldom have diſmiſſed the Cauſe while either of them have any thing left.

My Maſter continuing his Diſcourſe, ſaid, There was nothing that rendered the *Yahoos* more odious, than their undiſtinguiſhing Appetite to devour every thing that came in their way, whether Herbs, Roots, Berries, the corrupted Fleſh of Animals, or all mingled together: And it was peculiar in their Temper, that they were fonder of what they could get by Rapine or Stealth at a greater Diſtance, than much better Food provided for them at Home. If their Prey held out, they would eat 'till they were ready to burſt; after which Nature had pointed out to them a certain *Root* that gave them a general Evacuation.

There was alſo another kind of *Root* very *juicy*, but ſomewhat rare and difficult to be found, which the *Yahoos* ſought for with much Eagerneſs, and would ſuck it with great Delight; and it produced the ſame Effects that Wine hath upon us. It would make them ſometimes hug, and ſometimes tear one another, they would howl and grin, and chatter, and tumble, and then fall aſleep in the Dirt.

I did indeed obſerve, that the *Yahoos* were the only Animals in this Country ſubject to any Diſeaſes; which, however, were much fewer than Horſes have among us, and contracted not by any Ill-treatment they meet with, but by the Naſtineſs and Greedineſs of that ſordid Brute. Neither has their Language any more than a general Appellation for theſe Maladies, which is borrowed from the Name of the Beaſt, and called *Hnea-Yahoo*, or the *Yahoo's-Evil*; and the Cure preſcribed is a Mixture of *their own Dung* and *Urine*, forcibly put down the *Yahoo*'s Throat. This I have ſince often taken myſelf, and do freely recommend it to my Country-men for the publick Good, as an admirable Specifick againſt all Diſeaſes produced by Repletion.

As to Learning, Government, Arts, Manufactures, and the like, my Maſter confeſſ-

confeſſed he could find little or no Reſemblance between the *Yahoos* of that Country and thoſe in ours. For, he only meant to obſerve what Parity there was in our Natures. He had heard indeed ſome curious *Houyhnhnms* obſerve, that in moſt Herds there was a ſort of ruling *Yahoo*, (as among us there is generally ſome leading or principal Stag in a Park) who was always more *deformed* in Body, and *miſchievous in Diſpoſition*, than any of the reſt. That this *Leader*, had uſually a Favourite as *like himſelf* as he could get, whoſe Employment was to *lick his Maſter's Feet and Poſteriors, and drive the female* Yahoos *to his Kennel*; for which he was now and then rewarded with a piece of Aſſes Fleſh. This *Favourite* is hated by the whole Herd, and therefore to protect himſelf keeps always *near the Perſon of his Leader*. He uſually continues in Office 'till a worſe can be found but the very Moment he is diſcarded, his Succeſſor at the Head of all the *Yahoos* in that Diſtrict, Young and Old, Male and Female, come in a Body, and diſcharge their Excrements upon him from; Head to Foot. But how far this might be applicable to our *Courts* and *Favouriter*, and *Miniſters of State*, my Maſter ſaid I could beſt determine.

I durſt make no Return to this malicicious Inſinuation, which debaſed human Underſtanding below the Sagacity of a common *Hound*, who has Judgment enough to diſtinguiſh and follow the Cry of the *ableſt Dog in the Pack*, without being ever miſtaken.

My Maſter told me there were ſome Qualities remarkable in the *Yahoos*, which he had not obſerved me to mention, or at leaſt very ſlightly, in the Accounts I had given him of human Kind; he ſaid, Thoſe Animals, like other Brutes, had their Females in common; but in this they differed, that the She-*Yahoo*, would admit the Male, while ſhe was pregnant, and that the Hees would quarrel and fight with Females as fiercely as with each other. Both which Practices were ſuch Degrees of Brutality, that no other ſenſitive Creature ever arrived at.

Another Thing to be wondered at in the *Yahoos*, was their ſtrange Diſpoſition to Naſtineſs and Dirt, whereas there appears to be a natural Love of Cleanlineſs in all other Animals. As to the two former Accuſations, I was glad to let them paſs without any Reply, becauſe I had not a Word to offer upon them in

Defence of my Species, which otherwise I certainly had done from my own Inclinations. But I could easily have vindicated human kind from the Imputation of Singularity upon the Article, if there had been any Swine in that Country, (as unluckily for me there were not) which, although it may be a *sweeter Quadruped*, than a *Yahoo*, cannot, I humbly conceive, in justice, pretend to more Cleanliness; and so his Honour himself must have owned, if he had seen their filthy way of feeding and their Custom of wallowing and sleeping in the Mud.

My Master likewise mentioned another Quality which his Servants had discovered in several *Yahoos*, and to him was wholly unaccountable. He said, a Fancy would sometimes take a *Yahoo* to retire into a Corner, to lie down and howl, and groan, and spurn away all that came near him, although he were young and fat, wanted neither Food nor Water; nor could the Servants imagine what could possibly ail him. And the only Remedy they found, was to set him to hard to work, after which he would infallibly come to himself. To this I was silent out of partiality to my own Kind; yet here I could discover the true Seeds of *Spleen*, which only seizeth on the *Lazy*, the *Luxurious*, and the *Rich*; who, if they were forced to undergo the *same Regimen*, I would undertake for the Cure.

His Honour had farther observed, that a Female *Yahoo* would often stand behind a Bank or Bush, to gaze on the young Males passing by, and then appear, and hide, using many antick Gestures and Grimaces, at which time it was observed, that she had a most *offensive Smell*, and when any of the Males advanced would slowly retire, looking often back, and with a Counterfeit shew of Fear, run off into some convenient Place, where she knew the Male would follow her.

At other Times, if a Female Stranger came among them, three or four of her own Sex would get about her, and stare and chatter, and grin, and smell her all over, and then turn off with Gestures that seemed to express Contempt and Disdain.

Perhaps my Master might refine a little in these Speculations, which he had drawn from what he had observed himself, or had been told him by others: However, I could not reflect without some

some Amazement and much Sorrow, that the Rudiments of *Lewdneſs*, *Coquetry*, *Cenſure*, and *Scandal*, ſhould have Place by Inſtinct in Womankind.

I expected every Moment, that my Maſter would accuſe the *Yahoos* of thoſe unnatural Appetites in both Sexes, ſo common among us. But Nature, it ſeems, hath not been ſo expert a School-miſtreſs; and theſe politer Pleaſures are entirely the Productions of Art and Reaſon, on our Side of the Globe.

CHAP. VIII.

The Author relates ſeveral Particulars of the Yahoos. *The great Virtues of the* Houyhnhnms. *The Education and Exerciſes of their Youth. Their general Aſſembly.*

AS I ought to have underſtood human Nature much better than I ſuppoſed it poſſible for my Maſter to do, ſo it was eaſy to apply the Character he gave the *Yahoos* to myſelf and my Countrymen; and I believed I could yet make farther Diſcoveries from my own Obſervation. I therefore often begged his Favour to let me go among the Herds of *Yahoos* in the Neighbourhood, to which he always very graciouſly conſented, being perfectly convinced, that the Hatred I bare thoſe Brutes would never ſuffer me to be corrupted by them; and his Honour ordered one of his Servants, a ſtrong ſorrel Nag, very honeſt and good-natured, to be my Guard, without whoſe Protection I durſt not undertake ſuch Adventures. For I have already told the Reader how much I was peſtered with thoſe odious Animals upon my firſt Arrival: And I afterwards ſailed very narrowly, three or four Times of falling into their Clutches, when I happened to ſtray at any Diſtance without my Hanger. And I have Reaſon to believe they had ſome Imagination that I was of their own Species, which I often aſſiſted myſelf, by ſtripping up my Sleeves, and ſhewing my naked Arms and Breaſt in their Sight, when

when my Protector was with me. At which times they would approach as near as they durſt, and imitate my Actions after the Manner of Monkeys, but ever with great Signs of Hatred, as a Tame *Jack-Daw* with Cap and Stockings, is always perſecuted by the wild ones, when he happens to be got among them.

They are prodigiouſly nimble from their Infancy; however, I once caught a young Male of three Years old, and endeavoured by all Marks of Tenderneſs to make it quiet; but the little Imp fell a ſqualling, and Scratching, and Biting with ſuch Violence that I was forced to let it go; and it was high Time, for a whole Troop of old Ones came about us at the Noiſe, but finding the Cub was ſafe, (for away it ran) and my Sorrel Nag being by, they durſt not venture near us. I obſerved the young Animal's Fleſh to ſmell very rank, and the Stink was ſomewhat between a *Weaſel* and a *Fox*, but much more diſagreeable. I forgot another Circumſtance (and perhaps I might have had the Reader's Pardon, if it were wholly omitted) that while I held the odious Vermin in my Hands, it voided its filthy Excrements of a yellow liquid Subſtance all over my Cloaths; but by good Fortune there was a ſmall Brook hard by, where I waſhed myſelf as clean as I could, although I durſt not come into my Maſter's Preſence, 'till I were ſufficiently aired.

By what I could diſcover, the *Yahoos* appear to be the moſt unteachable of all Animals, their Capacities never reaching higher than to draw or carry Burthens. Yet I am of Opinion, this Defect ariſeth chiefly from a Perverſe, reſtive Diſpoſition. For they are cunning, malicious, treacherous, and revengeful. They are ſtrong and hardy, but of a cowardly Spirit, and by Conſequence, inſolent, abject, and cruel. It is obſerved, that the *Red-haired* of both Sexes are more libidinous and miſchiveous than the reſt, whom yet they much exceed in Strength and Activity.

The *Houyhnhnms* keep the *Yahoos* for preſent Uſe in Huts, not far from the Houſe; but the reſt are ſent Abroad to certain Fields, where they dig up Roots, eat ſeveral Kinds of Herbs, and ſearch about for Carrion, or ſometimes catch *Weaſels* and *Lubimuhs* (a ſort of *wild Rat*) which they greedily devour. Nature

ture hath taught them to dig deep Holes with their Nails on the ſide of a riſing Ground where they lie by themſelves, only the Kennels of the Females are larger, ſufficient to hold two or three Cubs.

They ſwim from their Infancy like Frogs, and are able to continue long under Water, where they often take Fiſh, which the Females carry Home to their Young. And upon this Occaſion, I hope the Reader will pardon my relating an odd Adventure.

Being one Day Abroad with my Protector, the ſorrel Nag, and the Weather exceeding hot, I entreated him to let me bathe in a River that was near. He conſented, and I immediately ſtripped myſelf ſtark naked, and went down ſoftly into the Stream. It happened that a young Female *Yahoo* ſtanding behind a Bank, ſaw the whole Proceeding, and enflamed by Deſire, as the Nag and I conjectured, came running with all Speed, and leaped into the Water within five Yards of the Place where I bathed. I was never in my Life ſo terribly frighted; the Nag was grazing at ſome Diſtance, not ſuſpecting any Harm. She embraced me after a moſt fulſome Manner; I roared as loud as I could, and the Nag came gallopping towards me, whereupon ſhe quitted her Graſp with the utmoſt Reluctance, and leaped upon the oppoſite Bank, where ſhe ſtood gazing and howling all the Time I was putting on my Cloathes.

This was Matter of Diverſion to my Maſter and his Family, as well as Mortification to myſelf. For now I could no longer deny that I was a real *Yahoo*, in every Limb and Feature, ſince the Females had a natural Propenſity to me as one of their own Species: Neither was the Hair of this Brute of a red Colour, (which might have been ſome Excuſe for an Appetite a little irregular) but black as a Sloe, and her Countenance did not make an Appearance altogether ſo hideous as the reſt of the Kind; for I think, ſhe could not be above eleven Years old.

Having lived three Years in this Country, the Reader, I ſuppoſe, will expect, that I ſhould, like other Travellers, give him ſome Account of the Manners and Cuſtoms of its Inhabitants, which it was indeed my Principal Study to learn.

As these noble *Houyhnhnms* are endowed by Nature with a general Disposition to all Virtues, and have no Conceptions or Ideas of what is evil in a rational Creature, so their grand Maxim is, to cultivate *Reason*, and to be wholly governed by it. Neither is *Reason* among them a Point Problematical as with us, where Men argue with Plausibility on both sides of a Question; but strikes you with immediate Conviction; as it must needs do where it is not mingled, obscured, or discoloured by Passion and Interest. I remember it was with extreme Difficulty that I could bring my Master to understand the Meaning of the Word *Opinion*, or how a Point could be disputable; because *Reason* taught us to affirm or deny only where we are certain; and beyond our Knowledge we cannot do either. So that Controversies, Wrangling, Disputes, and Positiveness in false or dubious Propositions are Evils unknown among the *Houyhnhnms*. In the like Manner when I used to explain to him our several Systems of *Natural Philosophy*, he would laugh that a Creature pretending to *Reason* should value itself upon the Knowledge of other Peoples Conjectures, and in Things, where that Knowledge, if it were certain, could be of no Use. Wherein he agreed entirely with the Sentiments of *Socrates*, as *Plato* delivers them; which I mention as the highest Honour I can do that Prince of Philosophers. I have often since reflected what Destruction such a Doctrine would make in the Libraries of *Europe*, and how many Paths to Fame would be then shut up in the learned World.

Friendship and *Benevolence* are the two principal Virtues among the *Houyhnhnms*, and these not confined to particular Objects, but universal to the whole Race. For a Stranger from the remotest Part is equally treated with the nearest Neighbour, and wherever he goes, looks upon himself as at Home. They preserve *Decency* and *Civility* in the highest Degrees, but are altogether ignorant of *Ceremony*. They have no fondness for their Colts or Foals; but the Care they take in educating them proceeds entirely from the Dictates of *Reason*. And I observed my Master to shew the same Affection to his Neighbour's Issue that he had for his own. They will have it, that *Nature* teaches them to love the whole Species; and it is *Reason* only that maketh a Distinction of Persons, where there is a superior Degree of Virtue.

When

When the Matron *Houyhnhnms* have produced one of each Sex, they no longer accompany with their Conſorts, except they loſe one of their Iſſue by ſome Caſualty, which very ſeldom happens: But in ſuch a Caſe they meet again; or when the like Accident befalls a Perſon, whoſe Wife is paſt bearing, ſome other Couple beſtow on him one of their own Colts, and then go together again 'till the Mother is pregnant. This Caution is neceſſary to prevent the Country from being overburthened with Numbers. But the Race of Inferior *Houyhnhnms*, bred up to be Servants, is not ſo ſtrictly limited upon this Article; theſe are allowed to produce three of each Sex, to be Domeſticks in the noble Families.

In their Marriages they are exactly careful to chuſe ſuch Colours as will not make any diſagreeable Mixture in the Breed. *Strength* is chiefly valued in the Male, and *Comelineſs* in the Female, not upon the Account of *Love*, but to preſerve the Race from degenerating; for where a Female happens to excel in *Strength*, a Conſort is choſen with regard to *Comlineſs*. Courtſhip, Love, Preſents, Jointures, Settlements, have no Place in their Thoughts; or Terms whereby to expreſs them in their Language. The young Couple meet and are joined, meerly becauſe it is the Determination of their Parents and Friends: It is what they ſee done every Day, and they look upon it as one of the neceſſary Actions of a rational Being. But the Violation of Marriage, or any other Unchaſtity, was never heard of: And the married Pair paſs their Lives with the ſame Friendſhip and mutual Benevolence that they bare to all others of the ſame Species, who come in their Way, without Jealouſy, Fondneſs, Quarreling, or Diſcontent.

In educating the Youth of both Sexes, their Method is admirable, and highly deſerves our Imitation. Theſe are not ſuffered to taſte a Grain of *Oats*, except upon certain Days, 'till eighteen Years old; nor *Milk*, but very rarely; and in Summer they graze two Hours in the Morning, and as long in the Evening, which their Parents likewiſe obſerve, but the Servants are not allowed above half that time, and a great Part of their Graſs is brought home, which they eat at the moſt convenient Hours, when they can be beſt ſpared from Work.

Temperance, *Induſtry*, *Exerciſe*, and *Cleanlineſs*,

Cleanlineſs, are the Leſſons equally enjoined to the young ones of both Sexes: And my Maſter thought it monſtrous in us to give the Female a different kind of Education from the Males, except in ſome Articles in Domeſtick Management; whereby as he truly obſerved, one half of our Natives were good for nothing but bringing Children into the World: And to truſt the Care of our Children to ſuch uſeleſs Animals, he ſaid was yet a greater Inſtance of Brutality.

But the *Houyhnhnms* train up their Youth to Strength, Speed, and Hardineſs, by exerciſing them in running Races up and down ſteep Hills, and over hard and ſtony Grounds; and when they are all in a Sweat, they are ordered to leap over Head and Ears in a Pond or a River. Four times a Year the Youth of a certain Diſtrict meet to ſhew their proficiency in Running and Leaping, and other Feats of Strength and Agility, where the Victor is rewarded with a Song made in his or her Praiſe. On this Feſtival the Servants drive a Herd of *Yahoos* into the Field, laden with Hay, and Oats, and Milk, for a Repaſt to the *Houyhnhnms*; after which, theſe Brutes are immediately driven back again, for fear of being noiſome to the Aſſembly.

Every fourth Year, at the *Vernal Equinox*, there is a repreſentative Council of the whole Nation, which meets in a Plain about twenty Miles from our Houſe, and continues about five or ſix Days. Here they enquire into the State and Condition of the ſeveral Diſtricts, whether they abound or be deficient in Hay or Oats, or Cows or *Yahoos*. And whereever there is any Want (which is but ſeldom) it is immediately ſupplied by unanimous Conſent and Contribution. Here likewiſe the Regulation of Children is ſettled: As for Inſtance, If a *Houyhnhnm* hath two Males, he changeth one of them with another that hath two Females: And when a Child hath been loſt by any Caſualty, where the Mother is paſt Breeding, it is determined what Family ſhall breed another to ſupply the Loſs.

CHAP.

CHAP. IX.

A grand Debate at the General Aſſembly of the Houyhnhnms, *and how it was determined. The Learning of the* Houyhnhnms. *Their Buildings. Their Manner of Burials. The Defectiveneſs of their Language.*

ONE of theſe Grand Aſſemblies was held in my time, about three Months before my Departure, whither my Maſter went as the Repreſentative of our Diſtrict. In this Council was reſumed their old Debate, and indeed, the only Debate that ever happened in that Country; whereof my Maſter, after his Return gave me a very particular Account.

The Queſtion to be debated, was, Whether the *Yahoos* ſhould be exterminated from the Face of the Earth? One of the *Members* for the affirmative offered ſeveral Arguments of great Strength and Weight, alledging, That as the *Yahoos* were the moſt filthy, noiſome, and deformed Animal which Nature ever produced, ſo they were the moſt reſtive and indocible, miſchievous, and malicious: They would privately ſuck the Teats of the *Houyhnhnms* Cows, kill, and devour their Cats, trample down their Oats and Graſs, if they were not continually watched, and commit a thouſand other Extravagancies. He took Notice of a general Tradition, That *Yahoos* had not been always in that Country: But, that many Ages ago, two of theſe Brutes appeared together upon a Mountain, whether produced by the Heat of the Sun upon corrupted Mud and Slime, or from the Ooze or Froth of the Sea, was never known. That theſe *Yahoos* engendered, and their Brood in a ſhort time grew ſo numerous as to over-run and infeſt the whole Nation. That the *Houyhnhnms*, to get rid of this Evil, made a general Hunting, and at laſt encloſed the whole Herd, and deſtroying the Old Ones; every *Houyhnhnm* kept two Young Ones in a Kennel, and brought them to ſuch a Degree of Tameneſs, as an Animal, ſo ſavage by Nature, can be capable of acquiring; uſing them for Draught and Carriage. That there ſeemed to be much Truth in this Tradition, and that thoſe Creatures

could not be *Ylnhniamſhy* (or *Aborigines* of the Land) becauſe of the violent Hatred the *Houyhnhnms*, as well as all other Animals, bore them; which although their evil Diſpoſition ſufficiently deſerved, could never have arrived at ſo high a Degree, if they had been *Aborigines*, or elſe they would have long ſince been rooted out. That the Inhabitants taking a Fancy to uſe the Service of the *Yahoos*, had very imprudently neglected to cultivate the Breed of *Aſſes*, which were a comely Animal, eaſily kept, more tame and orderly, without any offenſive Smell, ſtrong enough for Labour, although they yield to the other in Agility of Body; and if their Braying be no agreeable Sound, it is far preferable to the horrible Howlings of the *Yahoos*.

Several others declared their Sentiments to the ſame purpoſe, when my Maſter propoſed an Expedient to the Aſſembly, whereof he had indeed borrowed the Hint from me. He approved of the Tradition mentioned by the *Honourable Member*, who ſpoke before, and affirmed, that the two *Yahoos* ſaid to be firſt ſeen among them had been driven thither over the Sea; that coming to Land, and being forſaken by their Companions, they retired to the Mountains, and degenerating by Degrees, became in Proceſs of time much more ſavage than thoſe of their own Species in the Country from whence theſe two Originals came. The Reaſon of his Aſſertion was, that he had now in his Poſſeſſion a certain wonderful *Yahoo*, (meaning myſelf) which moſt of them had heard of, and many of them had ſeen. He then related to them, how he firſt found me, that my Body was all covered with an artificial Compoſure of the Skins and Hairs of other Animals: That I had a Language of my own, and had thoroughly learned theirs: That I had related to him the Accidents which brought me thither: That when he ſaw me without my Covering, I was an exact *Yahoo* in every Part, only of a whiter Colour, and leſs hairy and with ſhorter Claws. He added, how I had endeavoured to perſuade him, that in my own and other Countries the *Yahoos* acted as the governing, rational Animal, and held the *Houyhnhnms* in Servitude: That he obſerved in me all the Qualities of a *Yahoo*, only a little more civilized by ſome Tincture of Reaſon, which however was in a Degree as far inferior to the *Houyhnhnm* Race, as the *Yahoos* of their Country were to me: That, among other things

ſhings, I mentioned a Cuſtom we had of *Caſtrating Houyhnhnms* when they were young, in order to render them tame; that the Operation was eaſy and ſafe; that it was no Shame to learn Wiſdom from Brutes, as Induſtry is taught by the Ant, and Building by the Swallow. (For ſo I tranſlate the Word *Lyhannh*, although it be a much larger Fowl) That this Invention might be practiſed upon the younger *Yahoos* here; which, beſides rendring them tractable and fitter for Uſe, would in an Age put and End to the whole Species without deſtroying Life. That, in the mean time the *Houyhnhnms* ſhould be *exhorted* to cultivate the Breed of Aſſes, which as they are in all reſpects more valuable Brutes, ſo they have this Advantage, to be fit for Service at five Years old, which the others are not 'till twelve.

This was all my Maſter thought fit to tell me at that time, of what paſſed in the Grand Council. But he was pleaſed to conceal one particular, which related perſonally to myſelf, whereof I ſoon felt the unhappy Effect, as the Reader will know in its proper Place, and from whence I date all the ſucceeding Misfortunes of my Life.

The *Houyhnhnms* have no Letters, and conſequently, their Knowledge is all traditional. But there happened few Events of any Moment among a People ſo well united, naturally diſpoſed to every Virtue, wholly governed by Reaſon, and cut off from all Commerce with other Nations, the hiſtorical Part is eaſily preſerved without burthening their Memory. I have already obſerved, that they are ſubject to no Diſeaſes, and therefore can have no need of Phyſicians. However, they have excellent Medicines compoſed of Herbs, to cure accidental Bruiſes and Cuts in the Paſtern or Frog of the Foot by ſharp Stones, as well as other Maims and Hurts in the ſeveral Parts of the Body.

They calculate the Year by the Revolution of the Sun and the Moon, but uſe no Subdiviſions into Weeks. They are well enough acquainted with the Motions of thoſe two Luminaries, and underſtand the Nature of *Eclipſes*; and this is the utmoſt Progreſs of their *Aſtronomy*.

In *Poetry* they muſt be allowed to excel all other Mortals; wherein the Juſtneſs of their Similes, and the Minuteneſs, as well as Exactneſs of their Deſcriptions,

ſcriptions, are indeed inimitable. Their Verſes abound very much in both of theſe, and uſually contain either ſome exalted Notions of Friendſhip and Benevolence, or the Praiſes of thoſe who were Victors in Races, and other bodily Exerciſes. Their Buildings, although very rude and ſimple, are not inconvenient, but well contrived to defend them from all Injuries of Cold and Heat. They have a kind of Tree, which at forty Years old looſens in the Root, and falls with the firſt Storm; they grow very ſtrait; and being pointed like Stakes with a ſharp Stone, (for the *Houyhnhnms* know not the Uſe of Iron) they ſtick them erect in the Ground about ten Inches aſunder, and then weave in Oat-ſtraw, or ſometimes Wattles betwixt them. The Roof is made after the ſame Manner, and ſo are the Doors.

The *Houyhnhnms* uſe the hollow Part, between the Paſtern and the Hoof of their Fore-feet, as we do our Hands, and this with greater Dexterity than I could firſt imagine. I have ſeen a white Mare of our Family thread a Needle (which I lent her on purpoſe) with that Joint. They milk their Cows, reap their Oats, and do all the Work which requirers Hands, in the ſame Manner. They have a kind of hard Flints, which by grinding againſt other Stones, they form into Inſtruments, that ſerve inſtead of Wedges, Axes, and Hammers. With Tools made of theſe Flints, they likewiſe cut their Hay, and reap their Oats, which there groweth naturally in ſeveral Fields: The *Yahoos* draw Home the Sheaves in Carriages, and the Servants tread them in ſeveral covered Hutts, to get out the Grain, which is kept in Stores. They make a rude kind of earthen and wooden Veſſels, and bake the former in the Sun.

If they can avoid Caſualties, they die only of Old-Age, and are buried in the obſcureſt Places that can be found, their Friends and Relations expreſſing neither Joy nor Grief at their Departure, nor does the dying Perſon diſcover the leaſt Regret that he is leaving the World, any more than if he were upon returning home from a Viſit to one of his Neighbours. I remember my Maſter having once made an Appointment with a Friend and his Family to come to his Houſe upon ſome Affair of Importance; on the Day fixed, the Miſtreſs and her two Children came very late; ſhe made two Excuſes, firſt for her Huſband, who, as

ſhe

ſhe ſaid, happeneth that very Morning, to *Shnuwnh*. The Word is ſtrongly expreſſive in their Language, but not eaſily rendered into *Engliſh*, it ſignifies, *to retire to his firſt Mother*. Her Excuſe for not coming ſooner, was that her Huſband dying late in the Morning, ſhe was a good while conſulting her Servants about a convenient Place where his Body ſhould be laid; and I obſerved ſhe behaved herſelf at our Houſe as chearfully as the reſt, and died about three Months after.

They live generally to ſeventy or ſeventy five Years, very ſeldom to fourſcore: Some Weeks before their Death they feel a gradual Decay, but without Pain. During this time they are much viſited by their Friends, becauſe they cannot go abroad with their uſual Eaſe and Satisfaction. However, about ten Days before Death, which they ſeldom fail in computing, they return the Viſits that have been made them by thoſe who are neareſt in the Neighbourhood, being carried in a convenient Sledge drawn by *Yahoos*, which Vehicle they uſe, not only upon this Occaſion, but when they grow old upon long Journeys, or when they are lamed by an Accident. And therefore when the dying *Houyhnhnms* return thoſe Viſits, they take a ſolemn Leave of their Friends, as if they were going to ſome remote Part of the Country; where they deſigned to paſs the reſt of their Lives.

I know not whether it may be worth obſerving, that the *Houyhnhnms* have no Word in their Language to expreſs any thing that is *Evil*, except what they borrow from the Deformities or ill Qualities of the *Yahoos*. Thus they denote the Folly of a Servant, an Omiſſion of a Child, a Stone that cut their Feet, a Continuance of foul or unſeaſonable Weather, and the like, by adding to each the Epithet of *Yahoo*: For Inſtance, *hhnm Yahoo*, *Whnaholm Yahoo*, *Ynlhmndwihlma Yahoo*, and an ill contrived Houſe *Ynholmhnmrohlnw Yahoo*.

I could with great Pleaſure enlarge farther upon the Manners and Virtues of this excellent People; but intending in a ſhort time to publiſh a Volume by itſelf expreſly upon that Subject, I refer the Reader thither. And in the mean time proceed to relate my own ſad Cataſtrophe.

CHAP. X.

The Author's Oeconomy and happy Life among the Houyhnhnms. *His great Improvement in Virtue, by converſing with them. Their Converſations. The Author has Notice given him by his Maſter, that he muſt depart from the Country. He falls into a Swoon for Grief, but ſubmits. He contrives and finiſhes a Canoo, by the Help of a Fellow-Servant, and puts to Sea at a Venture.*

I Had ſettled my little Oeconomy, to my Heart's Content. My Maſter had ordered a Room for me, after their Manner, about ſix Yards from the Houſe, and the Sides and Floors of which I plaiſtered with Clay, and covered with Ruſh Matts of my own contriving; I had beaten Hemp, which there grows wild, and made of it a ſort of Ticking. This I filled with the Feathers of ſeveral Birds I had taken with Springes made of *Yahoos* Hairs, and were excellent Food. I had worked two Chairs with my Knife, the Sorrel Nag helping me in the groſſer and more laborious Part. When my Cloaths were worn to Rags, I made myſelf others with the Skins of Rabbets, and of a certain beautiful Animal about the ſame Size, called *Nuhnoh*, the Skin of which is covered with a fine Down. Of theſe I made very tolerable Stockings. I ſoaled my Shoes with Wood, which I cut from a Tree, and fitted to the upper Leather; and when this was worn out, I ſupplied it with the Skins of *Yahoos* dried in the Sun. I often got Honey out of hollow Trees, which I mingled with Water, or eat with my Bread. No Man could more verify the Truth of theſe two Maxims, *That Nature is very eaſily ſatisfied*; and *Neceſſity is the Mother of Invention*. I enjoyed perfect Health of Body and Tranquillity of Mind; I did not find the Treachery or Inconſtancy of a Friend, nor the Injuries of a Secret or open Enemy; I had no Occaſion of Bribing, Flattering, or Pimping, to procure the Favour of any Great Man, or of his Minion; I wanted no Fence againſt Fraud or Oppreſſion; here was neither Phyſician to deſtroy my Body, nor Lawyer to ruin my Fortune; no Informer to watch my Words and Actions, or forge Accuſations

ſations againſt me for Hire; here were no Gibers, Cenſurers, Backbiters, Pick-pockets, Highwaymen, Houſebreakers, Attorneys, Bawds, Buffoons, Gameſters, Politicians, Wits, ſplentick tedious Talkers, Controvertiſts, Raviſhers, Murderers, Robbers, Virtuoſo's; no Leaders or Followers of Party and Faction; no Encouragers to Vice, by Seducement, or Examples; no Dungeon, Axes, Gibbets, Whipping-Poſts, or Pillories; no cheating Shopkeepers or Mechanicks; no Pride, Vanity, or Affectation; no Fops, Bullies, Drunkards, ſtrolling Whores, or Poxes; no ranting, lewd, expenſive Wives; no ſtupid, proud Pedants; no Importunate, overbearing, quarrelſome, noiſy, roaring, empty, conceited, ſwearing Companions; no Scoundrels, raiſed from the Duſt for the ſake of their Vices, or Nobility thrown into it on Account of their Virtues; no Lords, Fidlers, Judges, or Dancing-Maſters.

I had the Favour of being admitted to ſeveral *Houyhnhnms*, who came to viſit or dine with my Maſter, where his Honour graciouſly ſuffered me to wait in the Room, and liſten to their Diſcourſe. Both he and his Company would often deſcend to aſk me Queſtions, and receive my Anſwers. I had alſo ſometimes the Honour of attending my Maſter in his Viſits to others. I never preſumed to ſpeak, except in Anſwer to a Queſtion, and then I did it with inward Regret, becauſe it was a Loſs of ſo much Time for improving myſelf: But I was infinitely delighted with the Station of an humble Auditor in ſuch Converſations, where nothing paſſed but what was uſeful, expreſſed in the feweſt and moſt ſignificant Words: Where the greateſt *Decency* was obſerved, without the leaſt Degree of Ceremony; where no Perſon ſpoke without being pleaſed himſelf, and pleaſing his Companions: Where there was no Interruption, Tedioufneſs, Heat or Difference of Sentiments. They have a Notion, That when People are met together, a ſhort Silence doth much improve Converſation: This I found to be true; for during thoſe little Intermiſſions of Talk, new Ideas would ariſe in the Thoughts, which very much enlivened their Diſcourſe. Their Subjects are generally on Friendſhip and Benevolence, on Order and Oeconomy, ſometimes upon the viſible Operations of Nature, or ancient Traditions, upon the Bounds and Limits of Virtue, upon the unerring Rules of Reaſon, or upon ſome Determinations,

nations, to be taken at the next great Aſſembly; and often upon the various Excellencies of *Poetry*. I may add without Vanity, that my Preſence gave them ſufficient Matter for Diſcourſe, becauſe it afforded my Maſter an Occaſion of letting his Friends into the Hiſtory of me and my Country, upon which they were all pleaſed to deſcant in a Manner not very advantageous to human Kind; and for that Reaſon I ſhall not repeat what they ſaid: Only I may be allowed to obſerve, That his Honour, to my great Admiration, appeared to underſtand the Nature of *Yahoos* in all Countries, much better than myſelf. He went through all our Vices and Follies, and diſcovered many which I had never mentioned to him, by only ſuppoſing what Qualifications a *Yahoo* of their Country, with a ſmall Proportion of Reaſon, might be capable of exerting; and concluded, with too much Probability, how vile as well as miſerable ſuch a Creature muſt be.

I freely confeſs, That all the little Knowledge I have of any Value, was acquired by the Lectures I received from my Maſter, and from hearing the Diſcourſes of him and his Friends; to which I ſhould be prouder to liſten, than to dictate to the greateſt and wiſeſt Aſſembly in *Europe*. I admired the Strength, Comelineſs, and Speed to the Inhabitants, and ſuch a Conſtellation of Virtues in ſuch amiable Perſons produced in me the higheſt Veneration. At firſt, indeed, I did not feel that natural Awe which the *Yahoos* and all other Animals bear towards them, but it grew upon me by Degrees, much ſooner than I imagined, and was mingled with a reſpectful Love and Gratitude, that they would condeſcend to diſtinguiſh me from the reſt of my Species.

When I thought of my Family, my Friends and my Countrymen, or human Race in general, I conſidered them as they really were, *Yahoos* in Shape and Diſpoſition only a little civilized, and qualified with the Gift of Speech, but making no other Uſe of Reaſon, than to improve and multiply thoſe Vices, whereof their Brethren in this Country had only the Share that Nature allotted them. When I happened to behold the Reflection of my own Form in a Lake or a Fountain, I turned away my Face in Horror and Deteſtation of myſelf, and could better endure the Sight of a common *Yahoo*, than of my own Perſon. By converſing with the *Houyhnhnms*, and looking

ing upon them with Delight, I fell to imitate their Gait and Geſture, which is now grown into a Habit, and my Friends often tell me, in a Blunt Way, that *I trot like a Horſe*; which, however, I take for a great Compliment: Neither ſhall I diſown, that in ſpeaking I am apt to fall into the Voice and Manner of the *Houyhnhnms* and hear myſelf ridiculed on that Account without the leaſt Mortification.

In the midſt of all this Happineſs, and when I looked upon myſelf to be fully ſettled for Life, my Maſter ſent for me one Morning a little earlier than his uſual Hour. I obſerved by his Countenance that he was in ſome Perplexity, and at a Loſs how to begin what he had to ſpeak. After a ſhort Silence, he told me, He did not know how I would take what he was going to ſay; that in the laſt general Aſſembly, when the Affair of the *Yahoos* was entered upon, the Repreſentatives had taken Offence at his keeping a *Yahoo* (meaning myſelf) in his Family, more like a *Houyhnhnm*, than a Brute Animal. That he was known frequently to converſe with me, as if he could receive ſome Advantage or Pleaſure in my Company: That ſuch a Practice was not agreeable to Reaſon or Nature, nor a Thing ever heard of before among them. The Aſſembly did therefore *exhort* him, either to employ me like the reſt of my Species, or command me to ſwim back to the Place from whence I came. That the firſt of theſe Expedients was utterly rejected by all the *Houyhnhnms*, who had ever ſeen me at his Houſe or their own: For they alledged, That becauſe I had ſome Rudiments of Reaſon added to the natural Pravity of thoſe Animals, it was to be feared, I might be able to ſeduce them into the woody and mountainous Parts of the Country, and bring them in Troops by Night to deſtroy the *Houyhnhnms* Cattle, as being naturally of the ravenous Kind, and averſe from Labour.

My Maſter added, That he was daily preſſed by the *Houyhnhnms* of the Neighbourhood to have the Aſſembly's *Exhortation* executed, which he could not put off much longer. He doubted it would be impoſſible for me to ſwim to another Country, and therefore wiſhed I would contrive ſome ſort of Vehicle reſembling thoſe I had deſcribed to him, that might carry me on the Sea, in which Work I ſhould have the Aſſiſtance of his own Servants, as well as thoſe of his Neighbours. He concluded, That for his own

part, he could have been content to keep me in his Service as long as I lived, because he found I had cured myſelf of ſome bad Habits and Diſpoſitions, by endeavouring, as far as my inferior Nature was capable, to imitate the *Houyhnhnms*.

I ſhould here obſerve to the Reader, that a Decree of the general Aſſembly in this Country, is expreſſed by the Word *Hnhloayn*, which ſignifies an *Exhortation*, as near as I can render it: For they have no Conception how a rational Creature can be *compelled*, but only *adviſed*, or *exhorted*, becauſe no Perſon can diſobey Reaſon without giving up his Claim to be a rational Creature.

I was ſtruck with the utmoſt Grief and Deſpair at my Maſter's Diſcourſe, and being unable to ſupport the Agonies I was under, I fell into a Swoon at his Feet; when I came to myſelf, he told me, that he concluded I had been dead. (For theſe People are ſubject to no ſuch Imbecillities of Nature.) I anſwered, in a faint Voice, That Death would have been too great an Happineſs; that altho' I could not blame the Aſſembly's *Exhortation*, or the Urgency of his Friends; yet in my weak and corrupt Judgment, I thought it might conſiſt with Reaſon to have been leſs rigorous. That I could not ſwim a League, and probably the neareſt Land to theirs might be diſtant above an hundred: That many Materials, neceſſary for making a ſmall Veſſel to carry me off were wholly wanting in this Country; which, however, I would attempt in Obedience and Gratitude to his Honour, although I concluded the Thing to be impoſſible, and therefore looked on myſelf as already devoted to Deſtruction. That the certain Proſpect of unnatural Death was the leaſt of my Evils: For, ſuppoſing I ſhould eſcape with Life by ſome ſtrange Adventure, how could I think with Temper of paſſing my Days among *Yahoos*, and relapſing into my old Corruptions, for want of Examples to lead and keep me within the Paths of Virtue? That I knew too well upon what ſolid Reaſons all the Determinations of the wiſe *Houyhnhnms* were founded, not to ſhaken by Arguments of mine, a miſerable *Yahoo*; and therefore after preſenting him with my humble Thanks for the Offer of his Servants Aſſiſtance in making a Veſſel, and deſiring a reaſonable Time for ſo difficult a Work, I told him I would endeavour to preſerve a wretched Being; and if ever I returned

to

to *England*, was not without Hopes of being uſeful to my own Species, by celebrating the Praiſes of the renowned *Houyhnhnms*, and propoſing their Virtues to the Imitation of Mankind.

My Maſter in a few Words made me a very gracious Reply, allowed me the ſpace of two *Months* to finiſh my Boat, and ordered the Sorrel Nag, my Fellow-Servant, (for ſo at this Diſtance I may preſume to call him) to follow my Inſtructions, becauſe I told my Maſter that his Help would be ſufficient, and I knew he had a Tenderneſs for me.

In his Company, my firſt Buſineſs was to go to that Part of the Coaſt, where my rebellious Crew had ordered me to be ſet on Shore. I got upon a Height, and looking on every Side into the Sea, fancied I ſaw a ſmall Iſland towards the *North-Eaſt*: I took out my Pocket-Glaſs, and could then clearly diſtinguiſh it about five Leagues off, as I computed; but it appeared to the Sorrel Nag to be only a blue Cloud: For, as he had no Conception of any Country beſides his own, ſo he could not be as expert in diſtinguiſhing remote Objects at Sea, as we who ſo much converſe in that Element.

After I had diſcovered this Iſland, I conſidered no farther; but reſolved it ſhould, if poſſible, be the firſt Place of my Baniſhment, leaving the Conſequence to Fortune.

I returned home and conſulting with the Sorrel Nag, we went into a Copſe at ſome Diſtance, where I with my Knife, and he with a ſharp Flint faſtened very artificially, after their Manner, to a wooden Handle, cut down ſeveral Oak-Wattles about the Thickneſs of a walking-Staff, and ſome larger Pieces. But I ſhall not trouble the Reader with a particular Deſcription of my own Mechanicks; let it ſuffice to ſay, that in ſix Weeks time, with the Help of the Sorrel Nag, who performed the Parts that required moſt Labour, I finiſhed a ſort of *Indian* Canoo, but much larger, Covering it with the Skins of *Yahoos* well ſtitched together, with hempen Threads of my own making. My Sail was likewiſe compoſed of the Skins of the ſame Animal; but I made uſe of the youngeſt I could get, the older being too tough and thick; and I likewiſe provided myſelf with four Paddles. I laid in a Stock of boiled Fleſh of Rabbets and Fowls, and

and took with me two Veſſels, one filled with Milk, and the other with Water.

I tried my Canoo in a large Pond near my Maſter's Houſe, and then corrected in it what was amiſs; ſtopping all the Chinks with *Yahoos* Tallow, 'till I found it ſtanch, and able to bear me and my Freight. And when it was as compleat as I could poſſibly make it, I had it drawn on a Carriage very gently by *Yahoos* to the Sea-Side, under the Conduct of the Sorrel Nag, and another Servant.

When all was ready, and the Day come for my Departure, I took leave of my Maſter and Lady, and the whole Family, mine Eyes flowing with Tears, and mine Heart quite ſunk with Grief. But his Honour out of Curioſity; and perhaps (if I may ſpeak it without Vanity) partly out of Kindneſs, was determined to ſee me in my Canoo, and got ſeveral of his neighbouring Friends to accompany him. I was forced to wait above an Hour for the Tide, and then obſerving the Wind very fortunately bearing towards the Iſland, to which I intended to ſteer my Courſe. I took a ſecond Leave of my Maſter: But as I was going to proſtrate myſelf to kiſs his Hoof, he did me the Honour to raiſe it gently to my Mouth. I am not ignorant how much I have been cenſured for mentioning this laſt Particular: For my Detractors are pleaſed to think it improbable, that ſo illuſtrious a Perſon ſhould deſcend to give ſo great a Mark of Diſtinction to a Creature ſo inferior as I. Neither have I forgot, how apt ſome Travellers are to boaſt of extraordinary Favours they have received. But if theſe Cenſurers were better acquainted with the noble and courteous Diſpoſition of the *Houyhnhnms*, they would ſoon change their Opinion.

I paid my Reſpects to the reſt of the *Houyhnhnms* in his Honour's Company; then getting into my Canoo, I puſhed off from Shore.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

The Author's dangerous Voyage. He arrives at New-Holland, *hoping to ſettle there. Is wounded with an Arrow by one of the Natives. Is ſeized and carried by Force into a* Portugueze *Ship. The great Civilities of the Captain. The Author arrives at* England.

I Began this deſperate Voyage on *February* 15, 1714-15, at 9 o'clock in the Morning. The Wind was very favourable; however, I made uſe at firſt only of my Paddles; but conſidering I ſhould ſoon be weary, and that the Wind might chop about, I ventured to ſet up my little Sail; and thus, with the Help of the Tide, I went at the Rate of a League and a half an Hour, as near as I could gueſs. My Maſter and his Friends continued on the Shore, 'till I was almoſt out of Sight; and I often heard the Sorrel Nag (who always loved me) crying out *Hnuy illa nyha maja Yahoo*, Take care of thyſelf, gentle *Yahoo*.

My Deſign was, if poſſible, to diſcover ſome ſmall Iſland uninhabited, yet ſufficient by my Labour to furniſh me with the Neceſſities of Life, which I would have thought a greater Happineſs than to be firſt Miniſter in the politeſt Court of *Europe*; ſo horrible was the Idea, I conceived of returning to live in the Society, and under the Government of *Yahoos*. For in ſuch a Solitude as I deſired, I could at leaſt enjoy my own Thoughts and reflect with Delight on the Virtues of thoſe inimitable *Houyhnhnms*, without any Opportunity of degenerating into the Vices and Corruptions of my own Species.

The Reader may remember what I related when my Crew conſpired againſt me, and confined me to my Cabin. How I continued there ſeveral Weeks, without knowing what Courſe we took, and when I was put on Shore in the long Boat, how the Sailors told me with Oaths, whether true or falſe, that they knew not in what Part of the World we were. However, I did then believe us to be about ten Degrees *Southward* of the *Cape of Good Hope*, or about 45 Degrees *Southern* Latitude, as I gathered from ſome general Words I over-heard among them, being I ſuppoſed to the *South-Eaſt* in their intended Voyage to *Madagaſcar*. And altho' this were but little better than Con-

jecture, yet I reſolved to ſteer my Courſe *Eaſt-ward*, hoping to reach the *South-Weſt* Coaſt of *New-Holland*, and perhaps ſome ſuch Iſland as I deſired, lying *Weſtward* of it. The Wind was full *Weſt*, and by ſix in the Evening I computed I had gone *Eaſtward* at leaſt eighteen Leagues, when I ſpied a very ſmall Iſland about half a League off, which I ſoon reached. It was nothing but a Rock with one Creek, naturally arched by the Force of Tempeſts. Here I put in my Canoo, and climbing up a part of the Rock I could plainly diſcover Land to the *Eaſt*, extending from *South* to *North*. I lay all Night in my Canoo, and repeating my Voyage early in the Morning, I arrived in ſeven Hours to the *South-Eaſt* Point of *New-Holland*. This confirmed me in the Opinion I have long entertained, that the *Maps* and *Charts* place this Country at leaſt three Degrees more to the *Eaſt* than it really is; which Thought I communicated many Years ago to my worthy Friend Mr. *Herman Moll*, and gave him my Reaſons for it, altho' he hath rather choſen to follow other Authors.

I ſaw no Inhabitants in the Place where I landed, and being unarmed, I was afraid of venturing far into the Country. I found ſome Shell-fiſh on the Shore, and eat them raw, not daring to kindle a Fire, for fear of being diſcovered by the Natives. I continued three Days feeding on Oyſters and Limpits, to ſave my own Proviſions; and I fortunately found a Brook of excellent Water, which gave me great Relief.

On the fourth Day, venturing out early a little too far, I ſaw twenty or thirty Natives upon a Height, not above five hundred Yards from me. They were ſtark naked, Men, Women and Children round a Fire, as I could diſcover by the Smoak. One of them ſpied me, and gave notice to the reſt; five of them advanced towards me, leaving the Women and Children at the Fire. I made what haſte I could to the Shore, and getting into my Canoo, ſhoved off: The Savages obſerving me retreat, ran after me; and before I could get far enough into the Sea, diſcharged an Arrow, which wounded me deeply on the Inſide of my left Knee. (I ſhall carry the Mark to my Grave.) I apprehended the Arrow might be poiſoned, and paddling out of the reach of their Darts (being a calm Day) I made a ſhift to ſuck the Wound, and dreſs it as well as I could.

I was at a Loſs what to do, for I durſt not return to the ſame Landing-place, but ſtood

ſtood to the *North*, and was forced to paddle; for the Wind, though very gentle, was againſt me, blowing *North-Weſt*. As I was looking about for a ſecure Land-place, I ſaw a Sail to the *North North-Eaſt*, which appearing every Minute more viſible, I was in ſome doubt, whether I ſhould wait for them or no; but at laſt my Deteſtation of the *Yahoo* Race prevailed, and turning my Canoo, I ſailed and paddled together to the *South*, I got into the ſame Creek from whence I ſet out in the Morning, chuſing rather to truſt myſelf among theſe *Barbarians*, than live with *European Yahoos*. I drew up my Canoo as cloſe as I could to the Shore, and hid myſelf behind a Stone by a little Brook, which, as I have already ſaid, was excellent Water.

The Ship came within half a League of this Creek, and ſent out her Long-Boat with Veſſels to take in freſh Water, (for the Place, it ſeems, was very well known) but I did not obſerve it 'till the Boat was almoſt on Shore, and it was too late to ſeek another Hiding-place. The Seamen at their Landing obſerved my Canoo, and rummaging it all over, eaſily conjectured that the Owner could not be far off. Four of them well-armed ſearched every Cranny and lurking Hole, 'till at laſt they found me flat on my Face behind the Stone. They gazed a-while in Admiration at my ſtrange uncouth Dreſs, my Coat made of Skins, my wooden ſoaled Shoes, and my furred Stockings; from whence, however, they concluded I was not a Native of the Place, who all go naked. One of the Seamen, in *Portugueze*, bid me riſe, and aſked who I was. I underſtood that Language very well, and getting upon my Feet, ſaid, I was a poor *Yahoo*, baniſhed from the *Houyhnhnms*, and deſired they would let me depart. They admired to hear me anſwer them in their own Tongue, and ſaw by my Complexion I muſt be an *European*; but were at a loſs to know what I meant by *Yahoos* and *Houyhnhnms*, and at the ſame time fell a laughing at my ſtrange Tone in ſpeaking, which reſembled the neighing of a Herſe. I trembled all the while betwixt Fear and Hatred: I again deſired leave to depart, and was gently moving to my Canoo; but they laid hold on me, deſiring to know what Country I was of? whence I came? with many other Queſtions. I told them I was born in *England*, from whence I came about five Years ago, and then their Country and ours were at Peace, therefore hoped they would not treat me as an Enemy, ſince I meant them no Harm, but was a poor *Yahoo*, ſeeking ſome deſolate

ſolate Place where to paſs the Remainder of my unfortunate Life.

When they began to talk, I thought I never heard or ſaw any thing ſo unnatural; for it appeared to me as monſtrous as if a Dog or a Cow ſhould ſpeak in *England*, as a *Yahoo* in *Houyhnhnm-land*. The honeſt *Portugueze* were equally amazed at my ſtrange Dreſs, and the odd Manner of delivering my Words, which, however, they underſtood very well. They ſpoke to me with great Humanity, and ſaid, they were ſure their Captain would carry me *gratis* to *Liſbon*, from whence I might return to my own Country; that two of the Seamen would go back to the Ship, inform the Captain of what they had ſeen, and receive his Orders; in the mean time, unleſs I would give my ſolemn Oath not to fly, they would ſecure me by Force. I thought it beſt to comply with their Propoſal. They were very curious to know my Story, but I gave them very little Satisfaction; and they all conjectured, that my Misfortunes had impaired my Reaſon. In two Hours, the Boat which went loaden with Veſſels of Water, returned with the Captain's Command to fetch me on Board. I fell on my Knees to preſerve my Liberty, but all was in vain; and the Men having tied me with Cords, heaved me into the Boat, from whence I was taken into the Ship, and from thence in the Captain's Cabbin.

His Name was *Pedro de Mendez*, he was a very courteous and generous Perſon; he entreated me to give ſome Account of myſelf, and deſired to know what I would eat or drink; ſaid I ſhould be uſed as well as himſelf, and ſpoke ſo many obliging things that I wondered to find ſuch Civilities from a *Yahoo*. However I remained ſilent and ſullen; I was ready to faint at the very Smell of him and his Men. At laſt I deſired ſomething to eat out of my own Canoo; but he ordered me a Chicken and ſome excellent Wine, and then directed that I ſhould be put to bed in a very clean Cabbin. I would not undreſs myſelf, but lay on the Bed-cloaths, and in half an Hour ſtole out when I thought the Crew was at Dinner, and getting to the ſide of the Ship was going to leap into the Sea, and ſwim for my Life, rather than continue among *Yahoos*. But one of the Seamen prevented me, and having informed the Captain, I was chained to my Cabbin.

After Dinner *Don Pedro* came to me, and deſired to know my Reaſon for

ſo

ſo deſperate an Attempt; aſſured me he only meant to do me all the Service he was able, and ſpoke ſo very movingly, that at laſt I deſcended to treat him like an Animal that had ſome little Portion of Reaſon. I gave him a very ſhort Relation of my Voyage, of the Conſpiracy againſt me by my own Men, of the Country were they ſet me on Shore, and of my three Years Reſidence there. All which he looked upon as if it were a Dream or a Viſion; whereat I took great Offence; for I had quite forgot the Faculty of Lying, ſo peculiar to *Yahoos* in all Countries where they preſide, and conſequently the Diſpoſition of ſuſpecting Truth in others of their own Species. I aſked him, Whether it were the Cuſtom in his Country to *ſay the Thing that was not?* I aſſured him I had almoſt forgot what he meant by Falſhood, and if I had lived a thouſand Years in *Houyhnhnmland*, I ſhould never have a Lye from the meaneſt Servant; that I was altogether indifferent whether he believed me or no; but however, in return for his Favours, I would give ſo much Allowance to the Corruption of his Nature, as to anſwer any Objection he would pleaſe to make, and then he might eaſily diſcover the Truth.

The Captain, a wiſe Man, after many Endeavours to catch me tripping in ſome Part of my Story, at laſt began to have a better Opinion of my Veracity; and the rather, becauſe he confeſſed, he met with a *Dutch* Skipper, who pretended to have landed with five others of his Crew upon a certain Iſland or Continent *South* of *New-Holland*, where they went for freſh Water, and obſerved a Horſe driving before him ſeveral Animals exactly reſembling thoſe I deſcribed under the Name of *Yahoos*, with ſome other Particulars, which the Captain ſaid he had forgot; becauſe he then concluded them all to be Lyes. But he added, that ſince I profeſſed ſo inviolable an Attachment to Truth, I muſt give him my Word of Honour to bear him Company in this Voyage without attempting any thing againſt my Life, or elſe he would continue me a Priſoner 'till we arrived at *Lisbon*. I gave him the Promiſe he required; but at the ſame time proteſted, that I would ſuffer the greateſt Hardſhips rather than return to live among *Yahoos*.

Our Voyage paſſed without any conſiderable Accident, and we arrived at *Lisbon*, *Nov.* 5, 1715. At our Landing the Captain forced me to cover myſelf with his Cloak, to prevent the Rabble from

crouding about me. I was conveyed to his own Houſe, and at my earneſt Requeſt, he led me up to the higheſt Room backwards. I conjured him to conceal from all Perſons what I had told him of the *Houyhnhnms*, becauſe the leaſt Hint of ſuch a Story would not only draw Numbers of People to ſee me, but probably, put me in Danger of being impriſoned or burnt by the *Inquiſition*. The Captain perſuaded me to accept a Suit of Cloaths newly made, but I would not ſuffer the Taylor to take my Meaſure; however, *Don Pedro*, being almoſt of my Size, they fitted me well enough. He accoutred me with other Neceſſaries all new, which I aired for twenty four Hours before I would uſe them.

The Captain had no Wife, nor above three Servants, none of which were ſuffered to attend at Meals, and his whole Deportment was ſo obliging, added to very good *human* Underſtanding, that I really began to tolerate his Company. He gained ſo far upon me, that I ventured to look out at the back Window. By Degrees I was brought into another Room, from whence I peeped into the Street, but drew my Head back in a Fright. In a Week's time he ſeduced me down to the Door: I found my Terror gradually leſſened, but my Hatred and Contempt ſeemed to encreaſe. I was at a laſt bold enough to walk the Street in his Company; but kept my Noſe well ſtopped with Rue, or ſometimes with Tobacco.

In ten Days, *Don Pedro*, to whom I had given ſome Account of my domeſtick Affairs, put it upon me as a Matter of Honour and Conſcience, that I ought to return to my native Country, and live at home with my Wife and Children. He told me there was an *Engliſh* Ship in the Port juſt ready to ſail, and he would furniſh me with all things neceſſary. It would be tedious to repeat his Arguments, and my Contradictions. He ſaid it was altogether impoſſible to find ſuch an Iſland as I deſired to live in; but I might command in my own Houſe, and paſs my time in a Manner as recluſe as I pleaſed.

I complyed at laſt, finding I could not do better. I left *Liſbon* the 24*th* Day of *November* in an *Engliſh* Merchant-man, but who was the Maſter I never enquired. *Don Pedro* accompanied me to the Ship, and lent me twenty Pounds. He took kind leave of me, and embraced me at parting, which I bore as well as I could. During the laſt Voyage I had no Commerce with the Maſter or any of his Men, but pretending I was Sick kept cloſe in my

Cab-

Cabbin. On the fifth of *December*, 1725, we caſt Anchor in the *Downs* about nine in the Morning, and at three in the Afternoon I got ſafe to my Houſe at *Redriff*.

My Wife and Family received me with great Surprize and Joy, becauſe they concluded me certainly dead; but I muſt freely confeſs the Sight of them filled me only with Hatred, Diſguſt, and Contempt, and the more by reflecting on the near Alliance I had to them For, altho' ſince my unfortunate Exile from the *Houyhnhnm* Conntry, I had compelled myſelf to tolerate the Sight of *Yahoos*, and to converſe with *Don Pedro de Mendez*; yet my Memory and Imaginations were perpetually filled with the Virtues and Ideas of thoſe exalted *Houyhnhnms*. And when I began to conſider, that by copulating with one of the *Yahoo*-Species I became a Parent of more, it ſtruck me with the utmoſt Shame, Confuſion and Horror.

As ſoon as I entered the Houſe, my Wife took me in her Arms, and kiſſed me, at which, having not been uſed to the touch of that odious Animal for ſo many Years, I fell in a Swoon for almoſt an Hour. At the time I am writing it is five Years ſince my laſt Return to *England*: During the firſt Year I could not endure my Wife or Children in my Preſence, the very Smell of them was intolerable, much leſs could I ſuffer them to eat in the ſame Room. To this Hour they dare not preſume to touch my Bread, or drink out of the ſame Cup, neither was I ever able to let one of them take me by the Hand. The firſt Money I laid out was to buy two young Stone-Horſes, which I keep in a good Stable, and next to them the Groom is my greateſt Favourite; for I feel my Spirits revived by the Smell he contracts in the Stable. My Horſes underſtand me tolerably well; I converſe with them at leaſt four Hours every Day. They are Strangers to Bridle or Saddle, they live in great Amity with me, and Friendſhip to each other.

Thus gentle Reader, I have given thee a faithful Hiſtory of my Travels for ſixteen Years, and above ſeven Months, wherein I have not been ſo ſtudious of Ornament as Truth. I could perhaps like others have aſtoniſhed thee with ſtrange improbable Tales, but I rather choſe to relate plain Matter of Fact in the ſimpleſt Manner and Style, becauſe my principal Deſign was to inform, and not to amuſe thee.

It is eaſy for us who travel into remote Countries which are ſeldom viſited by *Engliſhmen* or other *Europeans*, to form Deſcriptions

ſcriptions of wonderful Animals both at Sea and Land. Whereas a Traveller's chief Aim ſhould be to make Men wiſer and better; and to improve their Minds by the bad as well as good Example of what they deliver concerning foreign Places.

I could heartily wiſh a Law was enacted, that every Traveller, before he were permitted to publiſh his Voyages, ſhould be obliged to make Oath before the *Lord High Chancellor*, that all he intended to print was abſolutely true, to the beſt of his Knowledge; for then the World would no longer be deceived, as it uſually is, while ſome Writers, to make their Works paſs the better upon the Publick, impoſe the groſſeſt Falſities on the unwary Reader. I have peruſed ſeveral Books of Travels with great Delight in my younger Days; but having ſince gone over moſt Parts of the Globe, and been able to contradict many fabulous Accounts from my own Obſervation, it hath given me a great Diſguſt againſt this part of Reading, and ſome Indignation to ſee the Credulity of Mankind ſo impudently abuſed. Therefore, ſince my Acquaintance were pleaſed to think my poor Endeavours might not be unacceptable to my Country, I impoſed on myſelf as a Maxim, never to be ſwerved from, that I would *ſtrictly adhere to Truth*; neither indeed can I ever be under the leaſt Temptations to vary from it, while I retain in my Mind the Lectures and Example of my noble Maſter, and the other illuſtrious *Houyhnhnms*, of whom I had ſo long the Honour to be an humble Hearer.

——— *Nec, ſi miſerum Fortuna Sinonem*
Finxit, vanum etiam, mendacemque improbas finget.

I am not a little pleaſed that this Work of mine can poſſibly meet with no Cenſurers: For what Objections can be made againſt a Writer who relates only plain Facts that happened in ſuch diſtant Countries where we have not the leaſt Intereſt with Reſpect either to Trade or Negotiations? I have carefully avoided every Fault with which common Writers of Travels are often too juſtly charged. Beſides, I meddle not with any *Party*, but write without Paſſion, Prejudice, or Ill-will againſt any Man, or Number of Men whatſoever. I write for the nobleſt End to inform and inſtruct Mankind, over whom I may, without Breach of Modeſty, pretend to ſome Superiority from the Advantages I received by converſing ſo long among the moſt accompliſhed

pliſhed *Houyhnhnms*. I write without any View towards Profit or Praiſe. I never ſuffer a Word to paſs that may look like Reflection, or poſſibly give the leaſt Offence even to thoſe who are moſt ready to take it. So that I hope I may with Juſtice pronounce myſelf an Author perfectly blameleſs, againſt whom the Tribes of Anſwers Conſiderers, Obſervers, Reflectors, Detecters, Remarkers, will never be able to find Matter for exerciſing their Talents.

I confeſs it was whiſpered to me, that I was bound in Duty, as a ſubject of *England*, to have given in a Memorial to a Secretary of State at my firſt coming over; becauſe whatever Lands are diſcovered by a Subject, belong to the Crown. But I doubt whether our Conqueſts in the Countries I treat of, would be as eaſy as thoſe of *Ferdinando Cortez* over the naked *Americans*. The *Lilliputians*, I think, are hardly worth the Charge of a Fleet and Army to reduce them, and I queſtion whether it might be prudent or ſafe to attempt the *Brobdingnagians*. Or whether an *Engliſh* Army would be much at their Eaſe with the Flying Iſland over their Heads. The *Houyhnhnms*, indeed, apear not to be ſo well prepared for War, a Science to which they are perfect Strangers, and eſpecially againſt miſſive Weapons. However ſuppoſing myſelf to be a Miniſter of State, I could never give my Advice for invading them. Their Prudence, Unanimity, Unacquaintedneſs with Fear, and their Love of their Country would amply ſupply all Defects in the Military Art. Imagine twenty Thouſand of them breaking into the midſt of an *European* Army, confounding the Ranks, overturning the Carriages, battering the Warriors Faces into Mummy, by terrible Yerks from their hinder Hoofs. For they would well deſerve the Character given to *Auguſtus*: *Recalcitrat undique tutus.* But inſtead of Propoſals for conquering that that magnanimous Nation, I rather wiſh they were in a Capacity or Diſpoſition to ſend a ſufficient Number of their Inhabitants for civilizing *Europe*, by teaching us the firſt Principles of Honour, Juſtice, Truth, Temperance, Publick Spirit, Fortitude, Chaſtity, Friendſhip, Benevolence, and Fidelity. The *Names* of all which Virtues are ſtill retained among us in moſt Languages, and are to be met with in ſome modern as well as antient Authors which I am able to aſſert from my own ſmall Reading.

But I had another Reaſon which made me leſs forward to enlarge his Majeſty's Dominions in my Diſcovery. To ſay the

Truth, I had conceived a few Scruples with Relation to the Diſtributive Juſtice of Princes upon thoſe Occaſions. For Inſtance, a Crew of Pirates are driven by a Storm they know not whither, at length a Boy diſcovers Land from the Top-maſt; they go on Shore to rob and plunder; they ſee an harmleſs People, are entertained with Kindneſs, they give the Country a new Name, they take formal Poſſeſſion of it for their King, they ſet up a rotten Plank or a Stone for a Memorial, they murder two or three Dozen of the Natives, bring away a Couple more by Force, for a Sample, return home and get their Pardon. Here commences a new Dominion acquired with a Title by *Divine Right*. Ships are ſent with the firſt Opportunities, the Natives driven out or deſtroyed, their Princes tortured to diſcover their Gold; a free Licence given to all Acts of Inhumanity and Luſt, the Earth reeking with the Blood of its Inhabitants: And this execrable Crew of Butchers, employed in ſo pious an Expedition, is a *modern Colony* ſent to convert and civilize an Idolatrous and barbarous People.

But this Deſcription, I confeſs, doth by no Means effect the *Britiſh* Nation, who may be an Example to the whole World for their Wiſdom, Care, and Juſtice in planting Colonies; their liberal Endowments for the Advancement of Religion and Learning; their Choice of devout and able Paſtors to propagate *Chriſtianity*, their Caution in ſtocking their Provinces with People of ſober Lives and Converſations, from this the Mother Kingdom; their ſtrict Regard to the Diſtribution of Juſtice in ſupplying the Civil Adminiſtration thro' all their Colonies, with Officers of the greateſt Abilities, utter Strangers to Corruption; and to crown all by ſending the moſt vigilant and virtuous Governors, who have no other Views than the Happineſs of the People over whom they preſide, and the Honour of the King their Maſter.

But, as thoſe Countries which I have deſcribed, do not appear to have a Deſire of being conquered, and enſlaved, murdered or driven out by Colonies, nor abound either in Gold, Silver, Sugar, or Tobacco; I did humbly conceive they were by no Means proper Objects of our Zeal, our Valour, or our Intereſt. However if thoſe whom it may concern, think fit to be of another Opinion, I am ready to depoſe, when I ſhall be lawfully called, that no *European* did ever viſit theſe Countries before me. I mean, if the Inhabitants ought to be believed; unleſs a Diſpute may ariſe about the two *Yahoos* ſaid to have been ſeen many

ny Ages ago on a Mountain in *Houyhnhnm-land*, from whence the Opinion is, That the Race of thoſe Brutes hath deſcended; and theſe, for any thing I know, may have been *Engliſh*, which indeed I was apt to ſuſpect from the Lineaments of their Poſterities, Countenances, altho' very much defaced. But how far that will go to make out a Title, I leave to the learned in Colony Law.

But as to the Formality of taking Poſſeſſion in my Sovereign's Name it never came once into my Thoughts; and if it had yet, as my Affairs then ſtood, I ſhould perhaps, in Point of Prudence and Self-Preſervation, have put it off to a better Opportunity.

Having thus anſwered the only Objecti n that can ever be raiſed againſt me as Traveller, I here take a final Leave of all my courteous Readers, and return to enjoy my own Speculations in my little Garden at *Redriff*, to apply thoſe excellent Leſſons of Virtue, which I learned among the *Houyhnhnms*, to inſtruct the *Yahoos* of my own Family as far as I ſhall find them docible Animals, to behold my Figure often in a Glaſs; and thus, if poſſible, habituate myſelf by time to tolerate the Sight of a human Creature: To lament the Brutality of *Houyhnhnms* in my own Country, but always treat their Perſons with Reſpect, for the Sake of my noble Maſter, his Family, his Friends, and the whole *Houyhnhnm* Race, whom theſe of ours have the Honour to reſemble in all their Lineaments, however their Intellectuals came to degenerate.

I began laſt Week to permit my Wife to ſit at Dinner with me, at the fartheſt End of a long Table, and to anſwer (but with the utmoſt Brevity) the few Queſtions I asked her. Yet the Smell of a *Yahoo* continuing very offenſive, I always keep my Noſe well ſtopt with Rue, Lavender, or Tobacco-Leaves. And altho' it be hard for Man late in life to remove old Habits, I am not altogether out of Hopes in ſome time to ſuffer a Neighbour *Yahoo* in my Company, without the Apprehenſions I am yet under of his Teeth or his Claws.

My Reconcilement to the *Yahoo* kind in general might not be ſo difficult, if they would be content with thoſe Vices and Follies only, which Nature hath intitled them to. I am not in the leaſt provoked at the Sight of a Lawyer, a Pick-pocket, a Colonel, a Fool, a Lord, a Gameſter, a Politician, a Whore-maſter, a Phyſician, an Evidence, a Suborner, an Attorney, a Traitor, or the like: This is all according to the due courſe of Things: But when I behold a Lump of Deformity and Diſeaſes both in Body and Mind, ſmitten

ſmitten with *Pride*, it immediately breaks all the Meaſures of my Patience; neither ſhall I be ever able to comprehend how ſuch an Animal and ſuch Vice could tally together. The wiſe and virtuous *Houyhnhnms*, who abound in all Excellencies that can adorn a rational Creature, have no Name for this Vice in the Language, which hath no Terms to expreſs any Thing that is Evil, except thoſe whereby they deſcribe the deteſtable Qualities of their *Yahoos*, among which they were not able to diſtinguiſh this of Pride, for want of thoroughly underſtanding human Nature, as it ſheweth itſelf in other Countries, where that Animal preſides. But I, who had more Experience, could plainly obſerve ſome Rudiments of it among the wild *Yahoos*.

But the *Houyhnhnms*, who live under the Government of Reaſon, are no more proud of the good Qualities they poſſeſs, than I ſhould be for wanting a Leg or an Arm, which no Man in his Wits would boaſt of, altho' he muſt be miſerable without them. I dwell the longer upon this Subject, from the Deſire I have to make the Society of an *Engliſh Yahoo* by any Means not inſupportable, and therefore I here entreat thoſe who have any Tincture of this abſurd Vice, that they will not preſeume to come in my Sight.

FINIS.